THE WORKS OF LAUR. STERNE, A.M.

Prebendary of York, *&c.*

In Seven Volumes.

VOL. I

DUBLIN: MDCCLXXX.

THE WORKS OF LAUR. STERNE, A.M.

Prebendary of York, *&c.*

In Seven Volumes.

VOL. I

DUBLIN: MDCCLXXX.

THE

WORKS

OF

LAURENCE STERNE, A. M.

PREBENDARY of *York*, and VICAR of *Sutton* on the Foreſt, and of *Stillington* near *York*.

WITH

The LIFE of the AUTHOR.

IN SEVEN VOLUMES.

The FIFTH EDITION with ADDITIONS.

DUBLIN:
Printed for D. CHAMBERLAINE, J. POTTS, and W. COLLES, Bookſellers.
M DCC LXXX.

BRITISH MUSEUM

TO

EUGENIUS,

THE

BELOVED FRIEND

OF

YORICK;

THESE

WORKS

Are moſt humbly INSCRIBED,

By the obedient Servants,

and Admirers of his Virtues,

The EDITORS.

Advertiſement.

THE extraordinary Avidity with which the Public received every Thing wrote by the late Mr. STERNE, (indubitably the beſt Teſt of their Merit) firſt encouraged the Editors to publiſh his Works entire; this Fifth Edition they have endeavoured to render ſtill more worthy of public Notice than the preceding ones, by embelliſhing it with four New Deſigns by eminent Maſters, and Copper-plate Titles, which with the former Plates they have got engraved, at a conſiderable Expence, by the beſt Iriſh Artiſts.

A Continuation of the Sentimental Journey hath been printed ſince Mr. *Sterne*'s Death, which the Editors would have taken the Liberty to add to their Edition, to complete that Part of the Author's Works, had it not been found, on Peruſal, ſo infinitely inferior to the Work of which an Imitation was promiſed, that they could not be guilty of obtruding ſo wretched a Performance on the Public.

The CRITICAL REVIEW for *May*, 1769, p. 390, ſpeaks of the *Continuation of the Sentimental Journey*, as follows:—"The *Immorality* "of this Publication is equal to its *Stupidity*, "and we ſhould look upon ourſelves as Acceſ- "ſaries to a contemptible Piece of Fineſſe, "ſhould we afford it any farther Notice."

Yet notwithſtanding the above Teſtimony, the taſteleſs Editor of an incorrect pyratical Edition of Sterne's Work, added that *ſtupid Piece of Obſcenity* as a Continuation of the Sentimental Journey; with equal Propriety and Judgment he might complete a Suit of Gold Tiſſue by adding a Train made of a *Tarpawling*

They have likewiſe in this Edition rejected two Volumes, publiſhed about a Year after the three laſt Volumes of Sermons, entitled, "The "poſthumous Works of a late celebrated "Genius," the *modeſty* of the Editor preventing him either from calling them Mr. Sterne's or affixing his own Name, though the general Conjecture, which ariſes almoſt to a Certainty, has placed them to the Account of Mr. R-ch-rd Gr-ff-th. In the Preface to which we are informed that "Theſe Notes were deſigned by "the Author to frame a larger Work from "than the preſent, to be publiſhed after he "ſhould find himſelf — or the Public — tired of "the ſportive Incoherence of his former Vo-"lumes —— But his untimely and unexpected "Death prevented him from digeſting and "completing the ſcheme."

We will not take upon us to ſay, that the Editor of the poſthumous Works was not poſſeſſed of ſome Papers or Anecdotes of Mr. Sterne, perhaps the Sweepings of his Study, but are convinced that the Pieces were either ſo unfiniſhed, or ſo adulterated by the Editor, that they want thoſe ſtrong Marks of Originality to be met with in almoſt every Page of the Author's Works.

The Editors have now firſt added to the Works, Three Volumes of Letters from Mr. Sterne to his moſt intimate Friends; a Fragment in the Manner of Rabelais, and Memoirs of his Life and Family, written by himſelf.

They have given a uniform and correct Edition, Part, for the curious, printed on a moſt excellent Paper, and, in ſhort, taken every Care to render this a complete Edition of the Author's genuine Works.

SOME ACCOUNT OF THE LIFE AND WRITINGS OF MR. STERNE.

HAPPILY in the laſt publication of Mr. Sterne's are inſerted Memoirs of his Life and Family, written by himſelf *, in which the place of his birth, and other particulars heretofore miſrepreſented, are authenticated.

All that is here meant is to give ſome account of his writings, and a few particulars of his Life not in the memoirs.

Upon Mr. Sterne's leaving the univerſity, he ſeated himſelf quietly in the lap of the church, at a ſmall vicarage in Yorkſhire, and there an occaſion offered which made him firſt feel himſelf, and to which, perhaps, we owe the origin of the hiſtory of Triſtram.

A diſpute among ſome of the ſuperiors of his order happened, in which Mr. Sterne's friend, one of the beſt men in the world, was concerned: a perſon, who filled a lucrative benefice, was not ſatisfied with enjoying it during his own life-time, but exerted all his intereſt to have it entailed upon his wife and ſon after his deceaſe.

* Prefixed to Vol. V.

Mr. Sterne's friend, who expected the reverſion of this living, had not, however, ſufficient influence to prevent the ſucceſs of his adverſary. At this critical period Mr. Sterne attacked the monopolizer in joke, and wrote "The hiſtory "of an old watch-coat, with which the preſent "poſſeſſor is not content to cover his own "ſhoulders, but wants to convert it into a "warm under petticoat for his wife, and a jer-"kin for his ſon*."

What all the ſerious arguments in the world could not have effected, Sterne's ſatyrical pen brought about. The intended monopolizer ſent him word, that if he would ſuppreſs the publication of this ſarcaſm, he would reſign his pretenſions to the next candidate. The pamphlet was ſuppreſſed, and the reverſion took place.

An incident, much about the ſame time, contributed exceedingly to eſtabliſh the reputation of Mr. Sterne's wit. It was this: he was ſitting in the coffee-houſe at York, when a ſtranger came in, who gave much offence to the company, conſiſting chiefly of gentlemen of the gown, by deſcanting too freely upon religion and the hypocriſy of the clergy. The young fellow at length addreſſed himſelf to Mr. Sterne, aſking him what were his ſentiments upon the ſubject; when, inſtead of anſwering him directly, he told the witling that *his dog was reckoned one of the moſt beautiful pointers in the whole county, was very good natured, but that he had an infernal trick which deſtroyed all his good qualities.—He never ſees a clergyman* (continued Sterne) *but he immediately flies at him.* "How long may he have had that trick?"—*Sir, ever ſince he was a puppy.* The young man felt the keenneſs

* See Vol. iv. p. 251. Lett. xi.

neſs of the ſatire, turned upon his heel, and left Sterne to triumph.

Mr. Sterne ſucceeded to ſome good livings, being firſt promoted to the vicarage of Sutton, in the Foreſt of Galtrees, and after made Prebend of York, both by the influence of his uncle. By Mrs. Sterne's intereſt he had the rectory of Stillington conferred on him. He remained near twenty years at Sutton, where he uſually performed divine ſervice on Sunday mornings; in the afternoons he preached at the rectory of Stillington, and aſſiſted regularly, in his turn, as Prebend, at the cathedral of York. During this time he enjoyed good health, and lived a becoming ornament of the church.

His wit and humour were greatly admired within the circle of his acquaintance; but his genius had never yet reached the capital. In 1760 he went up to London to publiſh his two firſt volumes of Triſtram Shandy. The work made its way into the world without any of the artifices which are often practiſed to put off an edition. A large impreſſion being almoſt inſtantaneouſly ſold, the Bookſellers became eager to purchaſe the ſecond edition of the copy, and it is ſaid Mr. Sterne ſold it for ſix hundred pounds.

The two firſt volumes of Triſtram Shandy were now in every body's hands. All read, moſt approved, but few underſtood them. Thoſe who had not entered into the ludicrous manner of Rabelais, or the poignant ſatire of Swift, did not comprehend them; but they joined with the multitude, and pronounced Triſtram Shandy very clever. Even the Reviewers recommended Mr. Shandy as a writer infinitely more ingenious and entertaining than any other of the preſent race of noveliſts; adding, his cha-

racters were ſtriking and ſingular, his obſervations ſhrewd and pertinent, and making a few exceptions, that his humour was eaſy and genuine.

The publication of theſe two volumes brought Mr. Sterne into great repute. He was conſidered as the genius of the age: his company was equally courted by the great, the literati, the witty, and the gay; and it was conſidered as a kind of honour to have paſt an evening with the author of Triſtram Shandy. Though ſome of the over rigid clergy condemned this ludicrous performance, and judged it incompatible with that purity and morality which ſhould ever accompany the writings of the gentlemen of the gown; theſe cenſures were far from being univerſal, even among the clergy: and the acquaintance he made by this publication, were in many reſpects advantageous to him. Among others, the Earl Faulconberg ſo particularly patronized the author of this work, that, to teſtify his approbation, he preſented Mr. Sterne with the curacy of Coxwould, which was an agreeable and convenient addition to his other livings, being all in the neighbourhood of York.

His next publication conſiſted of two volumes of ſermons, which the ſevereſt critics could not help applauding for the purity and elegance of their ſtyle, and the excellence of their moral: the manner in which they were uſhered to public notice was, by ſome, ſeverely condemned, whilſt others lamented, that ſuch excellent diſcourſes ſhould ſtand in need of ſuch an introduction; and many were of opinion, that he had wrote Triſtram Shandy purely to introduce them, as, in his preface to the ſermons, he acquaints the reader, that "The ſermon which

"gave

" gave riſe to the publication of theſe, having " been offered to the public as a ſermon of " Yorick's, he hoped the moſt ſerious reader " would find nothing to offend him, in his con- " tinuing thoſe two volumes under the ſame " title: leſt it ſhould be otherwiſe, I have ad- " ded a ſecond title page, with the real name " of the author: —— the firſt will ſerve the " bookſellers purpoſe, as Yorick's name *is* poſ- " ſibly of the two the *more known*; —— and the " ſecond will eaſe the minds of thoſe who ſee " a *jeſt*, and the *danger* which lurks under it, " *where no jeſt was meant.*"

The third and fourth volumes of Triſtram Shandy next made their appearance, and were allowed to contain a greater degree of Cervantic ſatire and more laughable humour than the laſt. Indeed his digreſſions were by many conſidered as tedious, his aſteriſks too obſcure; and ſome invidious critics inſinuated, that they were too indelicate for the eye of chaſtity. But Mr. Sterne, in an advertiſement to the laſt ſermon in the 4th volume, calls Triſtram Shandy, " a " moral work more read than underſtood."

He had nevertheleſs a great number of admirers; and Triſtram was almoſt as much known in Paris as in London, among men of condition and learning.

The ſucceeding year introduced the fifth and ſixth Volumes. Their ſatire was ſtill poignant, ſpirited, and in general extremely juſt, the characters lively and in nature. He conſtantly caught the ridiculous wherever he found it; and he never failed to preſent it to his readers in the moſt agreeable point of light. Theſe volumes contain the pathetic epiſode of Le Fever, in which the benevolence of Capt. Shandy

Shandy appears ſo conſpicuous as to do honour to human nature.

The ſeventh and eighth volumes appeared in ſucceſſion. In them Mr. Sterne preſents his readers with a comic account of his journey from Calais through Paris to the Garonne; 'tis a laughing good-tempered ſatire againſt travelling (as *Puppies* travel) and executed with great ſpirit.

'Two more volumes of ſermons were now uſhered into the world, with as large and ſplendid a liſt of ſubſcribers as ever appeared in the front of a book, almoſt all the nobility of England having honoured it with their names, and it was computed that the profits ariſing from this publication would amount to three hundred pounds, excluſive of the ſale of the copy.

Mr. Sterne would ſeem to reſt his claim to fame ſolely on the merit of his ſermons, which were conſidered by judges as ſome of the beſt moral diſcourſes extant; they all came indeed warm from the heart and were directed to the heart: It was his opinion, that "To preach to "ſhew the extent of our reading or the ſubtil-"ties of our wit—to parade it in the eyes of "the vulgar with the beggarly accounts of a "little learning, tinſeled over with a few words "which glitter, but convey little light and leſs "warmth—is a diſhoneſt uſe of the poor ſin-"gle half hour in a week, which is put into "the hands of the clergy;——*'tis not preach-"ing the goſpel—but themſelves.*"

Mr. Sterne failed in his engagement to the public this year, as he publiſhed but one volume of Shandy. The ſubject is indeed intereſting, being the amours of Capt. Shandy with the widow Wadman. The unequalled knowledge

Mr.

Mr. Sterne diſplays of the tender paſſion in this recital, as well as in many paſſages of the Sentimental Journey, are evident proofs that he ſtands unrivalled in the ſcience of love, even by the gallant Ovid; no wonder then that the ninth volume was much better liked than any of the preceding ones.

It is almoſt needleſs to obſerve, of a book ſo univerſally read as Shandy, that the ſtory of the hero's life is the leaſt part of the author's concern. It is, in reality, nothing more than a vehicle for ſatire on a great variety of ſubjects. Moſt of theſe ſatirical ſtrokes are introduced with a ſtudied diſregard to connexion, either with the principal ſtory or with each other. The author having no determined end in view, runs from object to object, as they happen to ſtrike a very lively imagination. In fact, the book is a perpetual ſeries of diſappointments; yet the Life of Triſtram Shandy has uncommon merit, and the freedom and ſincerity of its author perhaps cannot be equalled by any other writer beſide the incomparable Montaigne; Mr. Sterne "wrote not to apologize for the "weakneſſes of his heart,—but to give an ac-"count of them." The faults of an original work are always pardoned; and it is not ſurpriſing, that, at a time, when a tame imitation makes almoſt the whole merit of ſo many books, ſo happy an attempt at novelty ſhould have been ſo well received.

The laſt work of Mr. Sterne, as well as Triſtram Shandy, has been unfortunately left unfiniſhed, he having in his Sentimental Journey through France and Italy carried his readers no further than the borders of Savoy. The profeſſed deſign of the author was to teach mankind

to

to love the world and their fellow creatures better than they do. The work turns therefore on thoſe gentle paſſions and affections which tend to promote it; but in the execution, the ſpirits and body of Mr. Sterne were ſo worn out and his feelings ſo torn, that it proved fatal to him.

Every page of the Sentimental Journey is replete with entertainment, it abounds with a variety of intereſting deſcriptions, among which the very pathetic accounts of the Monk and Maria are moſt conſpicuous.

The ſucceſs of this work has been equal to its merit, as we can with truth affirm it has gone through more editions than any other book publiſhed in our memory.

Mr. Sterne's ill ſtate of health obliged him to go to France, in the year 1762, for the recovery of it. On his arrival at Paris he found Shandy ſo well known among the great and the learned, that it procured its author an eaſy introduction to moſt of the polite circles in that metropolis. He was followed by Mrs. and Miſs Sterne in about ſix months, with whom he paſſed near two years at Paris, Toulouſe, and Montpellier, in a moſt pleaſurable manner. In 1764 Mr. Sterne returned to England, but Mrs. Sterne chooſing to ſtay behind for two or three years, to eſtabliſh her health, Mr. Sterne reluctantly conſented, it being a conjugal maxim of his, that "We all live the longer — at "leaſt the happier — for having things our "own way." During Mrs. Sterne's reſidence in France he was particularly attentive to prevent her wants, and allowed her an unlimited credit, ſenſible that her œconomical virtue was greater than his. Indeed he began to regret his profuſe manner of living, (his income ſcarce keeping

keeping pace with his expence) and made a promiſe to his daughter that in future the produce of his pen ſhould be hers.

In 1765, Mr. Sterne went to Italy for the recovery of his health, in his route home he called on Mrs. Sterne to try to engage her to return to England with him, but her preſent indiſpoſition would not permit it.

Mr. Sterne was happy in his ſenſibility, and declared, though it had often made him wretched, that he would not exchange it for all the pleaſures the groſſeſt ſenſualiſt ever enjoyed. "Source inexhauſted" he calls it, "of all "that's precious in our joys or coſtly in our "ſorrows! thou chaineſt the martyr down upon "his bed of ſtraw—and it is thou who lifts "him up to HEAVEN—eternal fountain of "our feelings!—it is here we trace thee—"and this is thy divinity which ſtirs within "us:"—his affections were perpetually "flying out and kindling at every groupe before "him," he ſaid, "that were he in a deſert "he would find out wherewith to call forth "his affections—if he could do no better he "would faſten them upon ſome ſweet myrtle, "or ſeek ſome melancholy cypreſs to connect "himſelf to—he would court their ſhade, and "greet them kindly for their protection—he "would cut his name upon them, and ſwear "they were the loveliеſt trees throughout the "deſert: if their leaves withered, he would "teach himſelf to mourn, and when they rejoiced he would rejoice along with them."

With ſuch diſpoſitions it is no wonder if woman, lovely attractive woman! moſt caught his attention, he declared "there was not a man "upon earth, who loved them ſo much as he "did:

" did: after all the foibles he had ſeen, and all
" the ſatires he had read againſt them, ſtill he
" loved them; being firmly perſuaded that a
" man who has not a ſort of an affection for
" the whole ſex, is incapable of ever loving a
" ſingle one as he ought."

" It had ever been one of the ſingular bleſſ-
" ings of his life, to be almoſt every hour of
" it miſerably in love with one princeſs or an-
" other, and his laſt flame happening to be
" blown out by a *whiff of jealouſy* on the ſud-
" den turn of a corner, he had lighted it up
" afreſh at the pure taper of Eliza, as he al-
" ways between one paſſion and another per-
" ceived his heart locked up, ſcarce finding in
" it to give Miſery a ſixpence, but the moment
" he was rekindled, he was all generoſity and
" good will again; and would do any thing in
" the world either for, or with any one, if
" they would but ſatisfy him there was no ſin
" in it.— And ye whoſe clay-cold heads and
" luke-warm hearts can argue down or maſk
" your paſſions — tell me what treſpaſs is it
" that man ſhould have them? or how his ſpi-
" rit ſtands anſwerable to the father of ſpirits,
" but for his conduct under them?"

" If nature has ſo wove her web of kind-
" neſs, that ſome threads of love and deſire are
" entangled with the piece — muſt the whole
" web be rent in drawing them out. — Whip
" me ſuch ſtoics, great governor of nature! —
" Wherever thy providence ſhall place me for
" the trials of my virtue — whatever is my
" danger — whatever is my ſituation — let me
" feel the movements which riſe out of it, and
" which belong to me as a man — and if I
" govern them as a good one — I will truſt

" the

" the iſſues to thy juſtice, for thou haſt made " us—and not we ourſelves."

The lady characterized above, under the Name of Eliza, is Mrs. Elizabeth Draper, wife of Daniel Draper, Eſq; chief of the Engliſh Factory at Surat, who coming to England for the recovery of her health, though by birth an Eaſt-Indian, became acquainted with Mr. Sterne; he immediately diſcovered in her a Mind ſo congenial with his own, ſo enlightened, ſo refined, and ſo tender, that their mutual attraction preſently joined them in the cloſeſt union that purity could poſſibly admit of*.

Mrs. Draper was not handſome, but ſomething more; ſhe had a moſt intelligent, animated, and good countenance, a ſomething in her eyes and voice ſhe poſſeſſed, in a degree more perſuaſive than any other woman, it was that bewitching ſort of nameleſs excellence that men of nice ſenſibility alone can be touched with.

The attachment of Mr. Sterne to this lady was communicated to Mrs. Sterne, by ſome inſidious acquaintance in France, but ſhe told the incendiary " that ſhe wiſhed not to be in- " formed, and begged him to drop the ſubject." Pity ſuch ſpoilers of domeſtic quiet, are not driven from ſociety, who under the maſk of friendſhip, too often plant a deadly ſhaft in the boſom of the innocent and unoffending party!

Mr. Sterne's general ill ſtate of health left him ſeldom long exempt from ſome violent attack, but he was ſo eminently poſſeſſed, of that " ſweet pliability of ſpirit, that can at once " ſurrender itſelf to illuſions, which cheat ex- " pectation and ſorrow of their weary moments! " —long—long ſince (ſaid he) had ye num- " bered

* See Letters from Yorick to Eliza, vol. iv. p. 191.

" bered out my days, had I not trod ſo great
" a part of them upon this enchanted ground:
" when my way is too rough for my feet, or
" too ſteep for my ſtrength, I get off it, to
" ſome ſmooth velvet path which fancy has
" ſcattered over with roſe-buds of delights; and
" having taken a few turns in it, come back
" ſtrengthened and refreſhed."

In October 1767, Mrs. Sterne and her daughter paid Mr. Sterne a viſit, who was much pleaſed with his wife's care of her daughter, in whom he found every natural and acquired accompliſhment that a fond parent could wiſh for.

They paſſed upwards of two months at his curacy of Coxwould, ſituated in a rich valley under Hamilton Hills, in the full enjoyment of all the ſimple plenty that it could produce, and where not a pariſhioner caught a hare, rabbit, or trout, but they brought it to him as an offering, ſo much was he eſteemed by them. Mr. Sterne being now obliged to return to the capital in order to publiſh his Sentimental Journey, Mrs. Sterne took a houſe in York ready furniſhed, until her return to France, her health being unſupportable in England.

Mr. Sterne, ſhortly after his arrival in London, finiſhed the buſineſs of publication, and had the ſatisfaction to find the work univerſally admired. In March he was ſeized with a pleuriſy which in a ſhort time proved fatal to him. It is rather odd that he ſhould have died nearly agreeable to a wiſh he had long before formed,
" That the Diſpoſer of all things may ſo order
" it, that it happen not to me in my own houſe
" — but rather in ſome decent inn — at home,
" I know it, — the concern of my friends, and
" the laſt ſervices of wiping my brows and

" ſmoothing

" ſmoothing my pillow, which the quivering
" hand of pale affection ſhall pay me, will ſo
" crucify my ſoul, that I ſhall die of a diſtem-
" per which my phyſician is not aware of:
" but in an inn, the few cold offices I wanted,
" would be purchaſed with a few guineas, and
" paid me with an undiſturbed but punctual
" attention."

He was buried privately in a new burying ground belonging to the pariſh of St. George's, Hanover-ſquare, at twelve o'clock at noon, attended only by two gentlemen in a mourning coach, no bell tolling. His works, however, will be a publick, a laſting monument, and will remain immortal, when thoſe of Rabelais and Cervantes are forgot: their characters were drawn from the particular genius of the times, but Sterne drew his from nature only.

The afflicted widow and daughter of the late Prebend, being encouraged by a very extenſive ſubſcription of the nobility and gentry, publiſhed three additional volumes of Sermons, which though not equal to the four ſelected and publiſhed by Mr. Sterne, yet have great merit. They then returned to France, where Mrs. Sterne wiſhed to ſettle her daughter, having received ſome advantageous propoſals for that purpoſe.

In 1775, Mr. Sterne's Daughter, now Mrs. Medalle, arrived in England, and publiſhed three volumes of her father's Letters to his particular Friends, which were likewiſe honoured with a powerful ſubſcription. Theſe letters fully exculpate their author from many invidious aſperſions caſt upon him during the latter part of his life, as it appears by them, after all the unreſtrained

reſtrained ſporting of his pen, that his heart was ever innocent.

Mr. Sterne hath drawn his own character (under the name of Yorick) with great ſkill and candour, in the firſt volume of Triſtram Shandy, p. 31.

His death was announced in the news-papers of March 22, 1768, by the following paragraph:

Died at his lodgings in Bond-ſtreet, the Rev. Mr. Sterne.

Alas, poor Yorick! I knew him well, a fellow of infinite *Jeſt*, moſt excellent *Fancy*, &c.

Wit, *Humour*, *Genius* hadſt thou, all agree;
One Grain of WISDOM had been worth the Three!

To the AUTHOR of the above Lines, on the Death of Mr. YORICK.

SO! — this is Wiſdom — to inſult the dead;
Heap fancied Crimes upon a Mortal's Head:
Well — be it ſo — ſuch Wiſdom — and ſuch Art
Shall never — never ſhall approach my Heart.
Whatever Yorick's Lot, in whate'er State,
I'd gladly riſk it, in the Hour of Fate.
Sooner than join with thee! — I would ſay rather
Unto Corruption — thou ſhalt be my Father.
" * Be thine, the avenging Angel's Lot decreed
" To point each Fault, and aggravate each Deed:
" Angel of Mercy! — thy ſweet taſk be mine
" To blot them, ere they reach the Throne divine!"
Yorick, farewell! Peace dwell around thy Stone;
Accept this tribute from a Friend unknown.

In

* Vide Triſtram Shandy.

In Human Breaſts, while Pity has a Claim,
Le Fever's Story ſhall enhance thy Fame;
Toby's Benevolence each Heart expand,
And faithful Trim confeſs the Maſter's Hand.
" * One generous Tear unto the Monk you gave;
" Oh let me weed this Nettle from thy Grave!"

An EPITAPH for the Rev. LAURENCE STERNE's Tomb-ſtone. By a LADY.

STERNE, reſt for ever, and no longer fear
The Critic's cenſure, or the Coxcomb's ſneer.
The gate of Envy now is clos'd on thee,
And Fame her hundred doors ſhall open free;
Ages unborn ſhall celebrate the page,
Where friendly join the Satiriſt and Sage.
O'er Yorick's tomb the brighteſt eyes ſhall weep,
And Britiſh Genius mournful vigils keep;
Then, ſighing, ſay, to vindicate thy fame,
'Great were his faults, but glorious was his flame.'

In MEMORY of Mr. STERNE, Author of *The Sentimental Journey*.

WITH wit, and genuine humour, to diſpel,
From the deſponding boſom, gloomy care,
And bid the guſhing tear, at the ſad tale
Of hapleſs love or filial grief, to flow
From the full ſympathiſing heart, were thine,
Theſe powers, Oh Sterne! but now thy fate demands
(No plumage nodding o'er the emblazon'd hearſe
Proclaiming honour where no virtue ſhone)
But

* See Sentimental Journey.

But the ſad tribute of a heart-felt ſigh:
What tho' no taper caſt its deadly ray,
Nor the full choir ſing requiems o'er thy tomb,
The humbler grief of friendſhip is not mute;
And poor Maria, with her faithful kid,
Her auburn treſſes careleſsly entwin'd
With olive foliage, at the cloſe of day
Shall chaunt her plaintive veſpers at thy grave;
Thy ſhade too, gentle Monk, mid aweful night,
Shall pour libations from its friendly eye;
For 'erſt his ſweet benevolence beſtow'd
Its generous pity, and bedew'd with tears
The ſod, which reſted on thy aged breaſt.

A CHARACTER and EULOGIUM of STERNE, and his WRITINGS;

In a familiar Epiſtle from a Gentleman in *Ireland* to his Friend.

Written in the Year 1769.

WHAT trifle comes next? — ſpare the cenſure, my friend,
This letter's no more from beginning to end;
Yet, when you conſider (your laughter, pray ſtifle)
The advantage, the importance, the uſe of a trifle —
When you think too beſide ——— and there's nothing more clear ——
That pence compoſe millions, and moments the year,
You ſurely will grant me, nor think that I jeſt,
That life's but a ſeries of trifles at beſt.

How

How wildly digreſſive! yet could I, O STERNE*,
Digreſs with thy ſkill, with thy freedom return!
The vain wiſh I repreſs — Poor YORICK no more
Shall thy mirth and thy jeſts "ſet the board on a "roar;"
No more thy ſad tale, with ſimplicity told,
O'er each feeling breaſt its ſtrong influence hold,
From the wiſe and the brave call forth ſympathy's ſigh,
Or ſwell with ſweet anguiſh humanity's eye:
Here

* The late reverend *Laurence Sterne*, A. M. &c. author of that truly original, humorous, heteroclite work, called The Life and Opinions of *Triſtram Shandy*, of a Sentimental Journey through France and Italy (which, alas! he did not live to finiſh) and of ſome volumes of Sermons. Of his ſkill in delineating and ſupporting his characters, thoſe of the father of his hero, of his uncle Toby, and of corporal *Trim* (out of numberleſs others) afford ample proof: To his power in the pathetic, whoever ſhall read the ſtories of *Le Fevre*, *Maria*, *the Monk*, and *the dead aſs*, muſt, if he has feelings, bear ſufficient teſtimony: And his *Sermons* throughout (though ſometimes, perhaps, chargeable with a levity not entirely becoming the pulpit) breathe the kindeſt ſpirit of *Philanthropy* of *good will towards man*. For the few exceptional parts of his works, thoſe ſmall blemiſhes

Quas aut incuria fudit,
Aut humana parum cavit natura ——

ſuffer them, kind critic, to reſt with his aſhes!

The above eulogium will, I doubt not, appear to you (and perhaps alſo to many others) much too high for

Here and there in the page if a blemiſh appear,
(And what page, or what life from a blemiſh is clear?)
TRIM and TOBY with ſoft interceſſion attend;
LE FEVRE intreats you to pardon his friend:
MARIA too pleads, for her favourite diſtreſs'd,
As you feel for her ſorrows, O grant her requeſt!
Should theſe advocates fail, I've another to call,
One tear of his MONK ſhall obliterate all.
Favour'd pupil of Nature and Fancy, of yore,
Whom from Humour's embrace ſweet Philanthropy bore,
While the Graces and Loves ſcatter flow'rs on thy urn,
And Wit weeps the bloſſom too haſtily torn;
This meed too, kind ſpirit, unoffended receive
From a youth next to SHAKESPEARE's who honours thy grave!

for the literary character of STERNE; I have not at preſent either leiſure or inclination to enter into argument upon the queſtion; but, in truth, I conſidered myſelf as largely his debtor for the tears and the laughter he ſo frequently excited, and was deſirous to leave behind me (for ſo long at leaſt as this trifle ſhall remain) ſome ſmall memorial of my gratitude: I will even add, that although I regard the memory of *Shakeſpeare* with a veneration little ſhort of idolatry, I eſteem the *Monk's horn box* a relick "as devoutly "to be wiſhed" as a pipe-ſtopper, a walking ſtick, or even an ink-ſtand of the *mulberry-tree*.

The END.

THE

LIFE

AND

OPINIONS

OF

TRISTRAM SHANDY,

GENTLEMAN.

Ταρασσει τὺς Ἀνθρώπυς ὲ τὰ Πράγμαλα, αλλα τὰ περι τῶν Πραγμαλων, Δογμαλα.

VOL. I.

To the RIGHT HONOURABLE

Mr. PITT.

SIR,

NEVER poor Wight of a Dedicator had leſs hopes from his Dedication, than I have from this of mine; for it is written in a bye corner of the kingdom, and in a retired thatch'd houſe, where I live in a conſtant endeavour to fence againſt the infirmities of ill health, and other evils of life, by mirth; being firmly perſuaded, that every time a man ſmiles—but much more ſo when he laughs, that it adds ſomething to this Fragment of Life.

I humbly beg, Sir, that you will honour this book by taking it—(not under your Protection,—it muſt protect itſelf, but)—into the coun-

try with you; where, if I am ever told, it has made you ſmile, or can conceive it has beguiled you of one moment's pain—I ſhall think myſelf as happy as a miniſter of ſtate—perhaps much happier than any one (one only excepted) that I have ever read or heard of.

I am, great Sir,

(and what is more to your Honour,)

I am, good Sir,

Your Well-wiſher,

and moſt humble Fellow-Subject,

THE AUTHOR.

THE LIFE and OPINIONS OF TRISTRAM SHANDY, Gt.

CHAP. I.

I Wiſh either my father or my mother, or indeed both of them, as they were in duty both equally bound to it, had minded what they were about when they begot me; had they duly conſider'd how much depended upon what they were then doing; —— that not only the production of a rational being was concern'd in it, but that poſſibly the happy formation and temperature of his body, perhaps his genius and the very caſt of his mind; — and, for aught they knew to the contrary, even the fortunes of his whole houſe might take their turn from the hu-

mours and diſpoſitions which were then uppermoſt:——Had they duly weighed and conſidered all this, and proceeded accordingly,—I am verily perſuaded I ſhould have made a quite different figure in the world, from that, in which the reader is likely to ſee me—Believe me, good folks, this is not ſo inconſiderable a thing as many of you may think it;—you have all, I dare ſay, heard of the animal ſpirits, as how they are transfuſed from father to ſon, *&c. &c.*—and a great deal to that purpoſe:——Well, you may take my word, that nine parts in ten of a man's ſenſe or his nonſenſe, his ſucceſſes and miſcarriages in this world depend upon their motions and activity, and the different tracts and trains you put them into; ſo that when they are once ſet a-going, whether right or wrong, 'tis not a halfpenny matter,—away they go cluttering like hey-go-mad, and by treading the ſame ſteps over and over again, they preſently make a road of it, as plain and as ſmooth as a garden-walk, which, when they are once uſed to, the Devil himſelf ſometimes ſhall not be able to drive them off it.

Pray my dear, quoth my mother, *have you not forgot to wind up the clock?*——*Good G---!* cried my father, making an exclamation, but taking care to moderate his voice at the ſame time,——*Did ever woman, ſince the creation of the world, interrupt a man with ſuch a ſilly queſtion?* Pray, what was your father ſaying?——Nothing.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

——Then, poſitively, there is nothing in the queſtion, that I can ſee, either good or bad.——Then let me tell you, Sir, it was a very unſeaſonable queſtion at leaſt,—becauſe it ſcattered and diſperſed the animal ſpirits, whoſe buſineſs it was to have eſcorted and gone hand-in-hand with the *HOMUNCULUS*, and conducted him ſafe to the place deſtined for his reception.

The HOMUNCULUS, Sir, in however low and ludicrous a light he may appear, in this age of levity, to the eye of folly or prejudice;—to the eye of reaſon in ſcientific reſearch, he ſtands confeſs'd—a BEING guarded and circumſcribed with rights:——The minuteſt philoſophers, who, by the bye, have the moſt enlarged underſtandings (their ſouls being inverſely as their enquiries) ſhew us inconteſtably, That the HOMUNCULUS is created by the ſame hand,—engender'd in the ſame courſe of nature,—endowed with the ſame locomotive powers and faculties with us:—That he conſiſts, as we do, of ſkin, hair, fat, fleſh, veins, arteries, ligaments, nerves, cartileges, bones, marrow, brains, glands, genitals, humours and articulations;—is a being of as much activity,—and, in all ſenſes of the word, as much and as truly our fellow-creature, as my Lord Chancellor of England.—He may be benefited, he may be injured,—he may obtain redreſs;—in a word, he has all the claims and rights of humanity, which *Tully*, *Puffendorf*, or

the beſt ethic writers allow to ariſe out of that ſtate and relation.

Now, dear Sir, what if any accident had befallen him in his way alone?—or that, thro' terror of it, natural to ſo young a traveller, my little gentleman had got to his journey's end miſerably ſpent;—his muſcular ſtrength and virility worn down to a thread;—his own animal ſpirits ruffled beyond deſcription,—and that in this ſad diſorder'd ſtate of nerves, he had laid down a prey to ſudden ſtarts, or a ſeries of melancholy dreams and fancies, for nine long months together.—I tremble to think what a foundation had been laid for a thouſand weakneſſes both of body and mind, which no ſkill of the phyſician or the philoſopher could ever afterwards have ſet thoroughly to rights.

CHAP. III.

TO my uncle Mr. *Toby Shandy* do I ſtand indebted for the preceding anecdote, to whom my father, who was an excellent natural philoſopher, and much given to cloſe reaſoning upon the ſmalleſt matters, had oft, and heavily complain'd of the injury; but once more particularly, as my uncle *Toby* well remember'd, upon his obſerving a moſt unaccountable obliquity, (as he call'd it) in my manner of ſetting up my top, and juſtifying the principles upon which I had done it,—the old gentleman ſhook his head, and in a tone more expreſſive by half of ſorrow than reproach,—he ſaid his heart all along foreboded, and he ſaw it verified in this, and from a thouſand other obſervations he had made

made upon me, That I ſhould neither think nor act like any other man's child: — *But alas!* continued he, ſhaking his head a ſecond time, and wiping away a tear which was trickling down his cheeks, *My Triſtram's misfortunes began nine months before ever he came into the world.*

——— My mother, who was ſitting by, look'd up, —— but ſhe knew no more than her backſide what my father meant — but my uncle, Mr. *Toby Shandy*, who had been often informed of the affair, — underſtood him very well.

CHAP. IV.

I Know there are readers in the world, as well as many other good people in it, who are no readers at all, — who find themſelves ill at eaſe, unleſs they are let into the whole ſecret, from firſt to laſt of every thing which concerns you.

It is in pure compliance with this humour of theirs, and from a backwardneſs in my nature to diſappoint any one ſoul living, that I have been ſo very particular already. As my life and opinions are likely to make ſome noiſe in the world, and, if I conjecture right, will take in all ranks, profeſſions, and denominations of men whatever, — be no leſs read than the *Pilgrim's Progreſs* itſelf — and, in the end, prove the very thing which *Montaigne* dreaded his eſſays ſhould turn out, that is, a book for a parlour window; —— I find it neceſſary to conſult every one a little in his turn; and therefore muſt beg pardon for going on a little further in the ſame way: For

which cauſe, right glad I am, that I have begun the hiſtory of myſelf in the way I have done; and that I am able to go on tracing every thing in it, as *Horace* ſays, *ab Ovo*.

Horace, I know, does not recommend this faſhion altogether: But that gentleman is ſpeaking only of an epic poem or a tragedy; — (I forget which) — beſides, if it was not ſo, I ſhould beg Mr. *Horace*'s pardon; — for in writing what I have ſet about, I ſhall confine myſelf neither to his rules, nor to any man's rules that ever lived.

To ſuch, however, as do not chooſe to go ſo far back into theſe things, I can give no better advice, than that they ſkip over the remaining part of this chapter; for I declare beforehand, 'tis wrote only for the curious and inquiſitive.

—— Shut the door. —— I was begot in the night, betwixt the 1ſt *Sunday*, and the firſt *Monday* in the month of *March*, in the year of our Lord one thouſand ſeven hundred and eighteen. I am poſitive I was. — But how I came to be ſo very particular in my account of a thing which happened before I was born, is owing to another ſmall anecdote known only in our own family, but now made public for the better clearing up this point.

My father, you muſt know, who was originally a *Turkey* merchant, but had left off buſineſs for ſome years, in order to retire to, and die upon his paternal eſtate in the county of ——————, was, I believe, one of the moſt regular men in every thing he did, whether 'twas matter of buſineſs, or matter of amuſement, that ever lived. As a ſmall ſpecimen of this extreme exactneſs of his to which he was in truth a

ſlave,

ſlave, — he had made it a rule for many years of his life, — on the firſt *Sunday night* of every month throughout the whole year, — as certain as ever the *Sunday night* came, — to wind up a large houſe-clock which we had ſtanding upon the back-ſtairs head, with his own hands; —— And being ſomewhere between fifty and ſixty years of age, at the time I have been ſpeaking of, — he had likewiſe gradually brought ſome other little family concernments to the ſame period, in order, as he would often ſay to my uncle *Toby*, to get them all out of the way at one time, and be no more plagued and peſter'd with with them the reſt of the month.

It was attended but with one misfortune, which, in a great meaſure, fell upon myſelf, and the effects of which I fear I ſhall carry with me to my grave; namely, that from an unhappy aſſociation of ideas which have no connection in nature, it ſo fell out at length, that my poor mother could never hear the ſaid clock wound up, — but the thoughts of ſome other things unavoidably popp'd into her head, — & *vice verſa*: — which ſtrange combination of ideas, the ſagacious *Locke*, who certainly underſtood the nature of theſe things better than moſt men, affirms to have produced more wry actions than all other ſources of prejudice whatſoever.

But this by the bye.

Now it appears, by a memorandum in my father's pocket-book, which now lies upon the table, "That on *Lady-day*, which was on the 25th of the ſame month in which I date my geniture, — my father ſet out upon his journey to *London* with my eldeſt brother *Bobby*, to fix him at *Weſtminſter* ſchool;" and, as it appears from the

the ſame authority, "That he did not get down to his wife and family till the *ſecond week* in *May* following," it brings the thing almoſt to a certainty. However, what follows in the beginning of the next chapter puts it beyond all poſſibility of doubt.

——But pray Sir, What was your father doing all *December*,—*January*, and *February*?——Why, Madam,—he was all that time afflicted with a Sciatica.

CHAP. V.

ON the fifth day of *November*, 1718, which to the æra fixed on, was as near nine kalendar months as any huſband could in reaſon have expected,—was I *Triſtram Shandy*, Gentleman, brought forth into this ſcurvy and diſaſtrous world of ours.—I wiſh had been born in the Moon, or in any of the planets, (except *Jupiter* or *Saturn*, becauſe I never could bear cold weather,) for it could not well have fared worſe with me in any of them (tho' I will not anſwer for *Venus*) than it has in this vile dirty planet of ours,—which o'my conſcience, with reverence be it ſpoken, I take to be made up of the ſhreds and clippings of the reſt;—not but the planet is well enough, provided a man could be born in it to a great title or to a great eſtate; or could any how contrive to be called up to public charges, and employments of dignity and power;—but that is not my caſe:—and therefore every man will ſpeak of the fair as his own market has gone in it;—for which cauſe I affirm it over again to be one of the vileſt

leſt worlds that ever was made; — for I can truly ſay, that from the firſt hour I drew my breath in it, to this, that I can now ſcarce draw it at all, for an aſthma I got in ſcating againſt the wind in *Flanders*; — I have been the continual ſport of what the world calls Fortune; and tho' I will not wrong her by ſaying, She has ever made me feel the weight of any great and ſignal evil; — yet with all the good temper in the world, I affirm it of her, That in every ſtage of my life, and at every turn and corner where ſhe could get fairly at me, the ungracious Ducheſs has pelted me with a ſet of as pitiful miſadventures and croſs accidents as ever ſmall HERO ſuſtained.

CHAP. VI.

IN the beginning of the laſt chapter I informed you exactly *when* I was born; — but I did not inform you *how*. *No*, that particular was reſerved entirely for a chapter by itſelf; — beſides, Sir, as you and I are in a manner perfect ſtrangers to each other, it would not have been proper to have let you into too many circumſtances relating to myſelf all at once. —— You muſt have a little patience. I have undertaken, you ſee, to write not only my life, but my opinions alſo; hoping and expecting that your knowledge of my character, and of what kind of a mortal I am, by the one, would give you a better reliſh for the other: As you proceed further with me, the ſlight acquaintance which is now beginning betwixt us, will grow into familiarity; and that unleſs one of us is in fault, will

will terminate in friendſhip.——*O diem præclarum!*——then nothing which has touched me will be thought trifling in its nature, or tedious in its telling. Therefore, my dear friend and companion, if you ſhould think me ſomewhat ſparing of my narrative on my firſt ſetting out,—bear with me,—and let me go on, and tell my ſtory my own way:——or if I ſhould ſeem now and then to trifle upon the road, or ſhould ſometimes put on a fool's cap with a bell to it for a moment or two as we paſs along,—don't fly off,—but rather courteouſly give me credit for a little more wiſdom than appears on my outſide;—and as we jogg on, either laugh with me, or at me, or in ſhort do any thing,—only keep your temper.

CHAP. VII.

IN the ſame village where my father and mother dwelt, dwelt alſo a thin, upright, motherly, notable, good old body of a midwife, who, with the help of a little plain good ſenſe, and ſome years full employment in her buſineſs, in which ſhe had all along truſted little to her own efforts, and a great deal to thoſe of dame nature,—had acquired, in her way, no ſmall degree of reputation in the world;—by which word *world*, need I in this place inform your worſhip, that I would be underſtood to mean no more of it, than a ſmall circle deſcribed upon the circle of the great world of four *Engliſh* miles diameter, or thereabouts, of which the cottage where the good old woman lived, is ſuppoſed to be the centre.—She had been left,

it

it ſeems, a widow in great diſtreſs, with three or four ſmall children, in her forty-ſeventh year; and as ſhe was at that time a perſon of decent carriage, — grave deportment, — a woman moreover of few words, and withal an object of compaſſion, whoſe diſtreſs and ſilence under it call'd out the louder for a friendly lift: the wife of the parſon of the pariſh was touch'd with pity; and having often lamented an inconvenience, to which her huſband's flock had for many years been expoſed, inaſmuch, as there was no ſuch thing as a midwife, of any kind or degree to be got at, let the caſe have been never ſo urgent, within leſs than ſix or ſeven long miles riding; which ſaid ſeven long miles in dark nights and diſmal roads, the country thereabouts being nothing but a deep clay, was almoſt equal to fourteen; and that in effect was ſometimes next to having no midwife at all, it came into her head, that it would be doing as ſeaſonable a kindneſs to the whole pariſh, as to the poor creature herſelf, to get her a little inſtructed in ſome of the plain principles of the buſineſs, in order to ſet her up in it. As no woman thereabouts was better qualified to execute the plan ſhe had formed than herſelf, the Gentlewoman very charitably undertook it; and having great influence over the female part of the pariſh, ſhe found no difficulty in effecting it to the utmoſt of her wiſhes. In truth, the parſon joined his intereſt with his wife's in the whole affair, and in order to do things as they ſhould be, and give the poor ſoul as good a title by law to practiſe as his wife had given by inſtitution, — he chearfully paid the fees for the ordinary's licence himſelf, amounting in the whole, to the ſum of

eighteen

eighteen ſhillings and four pence; ſo that betwix them both, the good woman was fully inveſted in the real and corporal poſſeſſion of her office, together with all its *rights, members, and appurtenances whatſoever.*

Theſe laſt words, you muſt know, were not according to the old form in which ſuch licences, faculties, and powers uſually ran, which in like caſes had heretofore been granted to the ſiſterhood. But it was according to a neat *Formula* of *Didius* his own deviſing, who having a particular turn for taking to pieces, and new framing over again, all kind of inſtruments in that way, not only hit upon this dainty amendment, but coax'd many of the old licenſed matrons in the neighbourhood, to open their faculties afreſh, in order to have this whim-wham of his inſerted.

I own I never could envy *Didius* in theſe kinds of fancies of his; — But every man to his own taſte. —— Did not Dr. *Kunaſtrokius*, that great man, at his leiſure hours, take the greateſt delight imaginable in combing of aſſes tails, and plucking the dead hairs out with his teeth, tho' he had tweezers always in his pocket? Nay, if you come to that, Sir, have not the wiſeſt men in all ages, not excepting *Solomon* himſelf, — have they not had their HOBBY-HORSES; — their running horſes — their coins and their cockle-ſhells, their drums and their trumpets, their fiddles, their pallets — their maggots and their butterflies? —— and ſo long as a man rides his HOBBY-HORSE peaceably and quietly along the King's highway, and neither compels you or me to get up behind him, —

Pray,

Pray, Sir, what have either you or I to do with it?

CHAP. VIII.

——— *De guſtibus non eſt diſputandum*; ——— that is, there is no diſputing againſt HOBBY HORSES; and, for my part, I ſeldom do; nor could I with any ſort of grace, had I been an enemy to them at the bottom, for happening at certain intervals and changes of the Moon, to be both fiddler and painter, according as the fly ſtings: ——Be it known to you, that I keep a couple of pads myſelf, upon which, in their turns, (nor do I care who knows it) I frequently ride out and take the air; — tho' ſometimes to my ſhame be it ſpoken, I take ſomewhat longer journies than what a wiſe man would think altogether right. But the truth is, — I am not a wiſe man; —— and beſides am a mortal of ſo little conſequence in the world, it is not much matter what I do; ſo I ſeldom fret or fume at all or about it: Nor does it much diſturb my reſt when I ſee ſuch great Lords and tall Perſonages as hereafter follow; — ſuch for inſtance, as my Lord A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q, and ſo on, all of a row, mounted upon their ſeveral horſes; — ſome with large ſtirrups, getting on in a more grave and ſober pace; — others on the contrary, tuck'd up to their very chins, with whips acroſs their mouths, ſcouring and ſcampering it away like ſo many little party-colour'd devils aſtride a mortgage, — and as if ſome of them were reſolved to break their necks. — So much the

the better — ſay I to myſelf; — for in caſe the worſt ſhould happen, the world would make a ſhift to do excellently well without them; — and for the reſt, — why, — God ſpeed them — e'en let them ride on without any oppoſition from me; for were their lordſhips unhorſed this very night — 'tis ten to one but that many of them would be worſe mounted by one half before to-morrow morning.

Not many of theſe inſtances therefore can be ſaid to break in upon my reſt. —— But there is an inſtance, which I own puts me off my guard, and that is when I ſee one born for great actions, and, what is ſtill more for his honour, whoſe nature ever inclines him to good ones; —— when I behold ſuch a one, my Lord, like yourſelf, whoſe principles and conduct are as generous and noble as his blood, and whom for that reaſon a corrupt world cannot ſpare one moment; — when I ſee ſuch a one, my Lord, mounted, though, it is but for a minute beyond the time which my love to my country has preſcribed to him, and my zeal for his glory wiſhes, — then, my Lord, I ceaſe to be a philoſopher, and in the firſt tranſport of an honeſt impatience, I wiſh the HOBBY-HORSE, with all his fraternity, at the Devil.

" My Lord,

" I Maintain this to be a dedication, notwithſtanding its ſingularity in the three great eſſentials, of matter, form, and place: I beg, therefore, you will accept it as ſuch, and that you will permit me to lay it with the moſt

" reſpectful

" reſpectful humility, at your Lordſhip's feet,
" —— when you are upon them, —— which
" you can be when you pleaſe; —— and that
" is, my Lord, whenever there is occaſion for
" it, and I will add, to the beſt purpoſes too.
" I have the honour to be,

My Lord,

Your Lordſhip's moſt obedient,

and moſt devoted

and moſt humble ſervant,

TRISTRAM SHANDY.

CHAP. IX.

I Solemnly declare to all mankind, that the above dedication was made for no one Prince, Prelate, Pope or Potentate, — Duke, Marquis, Earl, Viſcount, or Baron of this, or any other Realm in Chriſtendom; —— nor has it yet been hawk'd about, or offered publicly or privately, directly or indirectly, to any one perſon or perſonage, great or ſmall; but is honeſtly a true Virgin-Dedication untried on, upon any ſoul living.

I labour this point ſo particularly, merely to remove any offence or objection which might ariſe againſt it, from the manner in which I propoſe to make the moſt of it; — which is the putting it up fairly to public ſale; which I now do.

—— Every author has a way of his own in bringing

bringing his points to bear; — for my own part, as I hate chaffering and higgling for a few guineas in a dark entry; —— I reſolved within myſelf, from the very beginning, to deal ſquarely and openly with your Great Folks in this affair, and try whether I ſhould not come off the better by it.

If therefore there is any one Duke, Marquis, Earl, Viſcount, or Baron, in theſe his Majeſty's dominions, who ſtands in need of a tight, genteel dedication, and whom the above will ſuit, (for by the bye, unleſs it ſuits in ſome degree, I will not part with it) — it is much at his ſervice for fifty guineas; — which I am poſitive is twenty guineas leſs than it ought to be afforded for, by any man of genius.

My Lord, if you examine it over again, it is far from being a groſs piece of daubing, as ſome dedications are. The deſign, your Lordſhip ſees, is good, the colouring tranſparent, — the drawing not amiſs; — or to ſpeak more like a man of ſcience, — and meaſure my piece in the painter's ſcale, divided into 20, — I believe, my Lord, the outlines will turn out as 12, — the compoſition as 9, — the colouring as 6, — the expreſſion 13 and a half, — and the deſign, — if I may be allowed, my Lord, to underſtand my own *deſign*, and ſuppoſing abſolute perfection in deſigning, to be as 20, — I think it cannot well fall ſhort of 19. Beſides all this, — there is keeping in it, and the dark ſtrokes in the HOBBY-HORSE, (which is a ſecondary figure, and a kind of back-ground to the whole) give great force to the principal lights in your own figure, and make it come off wonderfully; —— and

beſides

beſides there is an air of originality in the *tout enſemble*.

Be pleaſed, my good Lord, to order the ſum to be paid into the hands of Mr. *Dodſley*, for the benefit of the author; and in the next edition care ſhall be taken that this chapter be expunged, and your Lordſhip's titles, diſtinctions, arms, and good actions, be placed at the front of the preceding chapter: All which from the words, *De guſtibus non eſt diſputandum*, and whatever elſe in this book relates to HOBBY-HORSES, but no more, ſhall ſtand dedicated to your Lordſhip—The reſt I dedicate to the MOON, who, by the bye, of all the PATRONS or MATRONS I can think of, has moſt power to ſet my book a-going, and make the world run mad after it.

Bright Goddeſs,

If thou art not too buſy with CANDID and Miſs CUNEGUND's affairs,—take *Triſtram Shandy*'s under thy protection alſo.

CHAP. X.

WHATEVER degree of ſmall merit, the act of benignity in favour of the midwife, might juſtly claim, or in whom that claim truly reſted,—at firſt ſight ſeems not very material to this hiſtory;—certain however it was that the gentlewoman, the parſon's wife, did run away at that time with the whole of it: And yet, for my life, I cannot help thinking but that the parſon himſelf tho' he had not the good fortune to hit upon the deſign firſt,——

yet

yet as he heartily concurred in it the moment it was laid before him, and as heartily parted with his money to carry it into execution, had a claim to ſome ſhare of it, —— if not to a full half of whatever honour was due to it.

The world at that time was pleaſed to determine the matter otherwiſe.

Lay down the book, and I will allow you half a day to give a probable gueſs at the grounds of this procedure.

Be it known then, that for about five years before the date of the midwife's licence, of which you have had ſo circumſtantial an account, —— the parſon we have to do with, had made himſelf a country talk, by a breach of all decorum, which he had committed againſt himſelf, his ſtation, and his office; —— and that was in never appearing better, or otherwiſe mounted, than upon a lean, ſorry, jack-aſs of an horſe, value about one pound fifteen ſhillings; who to ſhorten all deſcription of him, was full brother to *Roſinante*, as far as ſimilitude congenial could make him; for he anſwered his deſcription to a hair-breath in every thing, —— except that I do not remember it is any where ſaid, that *Roſinante* was broken-winded; and that moreover, *Roſinante*, as is the happineſs of moſt *Spaniſh* horſes fat or lean, —— was undoubtedly a horſe at all points.

I know very well that the HERO's horſe was a horſe of chaſte deportment, which may have given grounds for a contrary opinion: But it is certain at the ſame time, that *Roſinante*'s continency (as may be demonſtrated from the adventure of the *Yangueſian* carriers) proceeded from no bodily defect or cauſe whatſoever, but from the

the temperance and orderly current of his blood, and let me tell you, Madam, there is a great deal of very good chaſtity in the world, in behalf of which you could not ſay more for your life.

Let that be as it may, as my purpoſe is to do exact juſtice to every creature brought upon the ſtage of this dramatic work,—I could not ſtifle this diſtinction in favour of Don *Quixote*'s horſe —— in all other points the parſon's horſe, I ſay was juſt ſuch another,——for he was as lean, and as lank, and as ſorry a jade, as HUMILITY herſelf could have beſtrided.

In the eſtimation of here and there a man of weak judgment, it was greatly in the parſon's power to have helped the figure of this horſe of his, for he was maſter of a very handſome demi-peak'd ſaddle, quilted on the ſeat with green pluſh, garniſhed with a double row of ſilver-headed ſtuds, and a noble pair of ſhining braſs ſtirrups, with a houſing altogether ſuitable, of grey ſuperfine cloath, with an edging of black lace, terminating in a deep, black, ſilk fringe, *poudre d'or*,—all which he had purchaſed in the pride and prime of his life, together with a grand emboſſed bridle, ornamented at all points as it ſhould be——But not caring to banter his beaſt, he had hung all theſe up behind his ſtudy door;—and, in lieu of them, had ſeriouſly befitted him with juſt ſuch a bridle and ſuch a ſaddle, as the figure and value of ſuch a ſteed might well and truly deſerve.

In the ſeveral ſallies about his pariſh, and in the neighbouring viſits to the gentry who lived around him,——you will eaſily comprehend, that the parſon, ſo appointed, would both hear and

and ſee enough to keep his philoſophy from ruſting. To ſpeak the truth, he never could enter a village, but he caught the attention of both old and young —— Labour ſtood ſtill as he paſs'd, the bucket hung ſuſpended in the middle of the well, — the ſpinning-wheel forgot its round, — even chuck-farthing and ſhuffle-cap themſelves ſtood gaping till he had got out of ſight; and as his movement was not of the quickeſt, he had generally time enough upon his hands to make his obſervations, — to hear the groans of the ſerious, — and the laughter of the light-hearted; — all which he bore with excellent tranquillity. —— His character was, — he loved a jeſt in his heart — and as he ſaw himſelf in the true point of ridicule, he would ſay, he could not be angry with others for ſeeing him in a light, in which he ſo ſtrongly ſaw himſelf: So that to his friends, who knew his foible was not the love of money, and who therefore made the leſs ſcruple in bantering the extravagance of his humour, — inſtead of giving the true cauſe, — he choſe rather to join in the laugh againſt himſelf, and as he never carried one ſingle ounce of fleſh upon his own bones, being altogether as ſpare a figure as his beaſt, — he would ſometimes inſiſt upon it, that the horſe was as good as the rider deſerved, — that they were, centaur-like, — both of a piece. At other times, and in other moods, when his ſpirits were above the temptation of falſe wit, — he would ſay, he found himſelf going off faſt in a conſumption; and, with great gravity would pretend, he could not bear the ſight of a fat horſe without a dejection of heart, and a ſenſible alteration in his pulſe; and

that

that he had made choice of the lean one he rode upon, not only to keep himſelf in countenance, but in ſpirits.

At different times he would give fifty humourous and oppoſite reaſons for riding a meek-ſpirited jade of a broken winded horſe, preferable to one of mettle; — for on ſuch a one he could ſit mechanically; and meditate as delightfully *de vanitate mundi et fuga ſeculi*, as with the advantage of a death's head before him; — that, in all other exercitations, he could ſpend his time, as he rode ſlowly along — to as much account as in his ſtudy; — that he could draw up an argument in his ſermon, — or a hole in his breeches, as ſteadily on the one as in the other; — that briſk trotting and ſlow argumentation, like wit and judgment, were two incompatible movements. — But that, upon his ſteed — he could unite and reconcile every thing, — he could compoſe his ſermon, — he could compoſe his cough, — and, in caſe nature gave a call that way, he could likewiſe compoſe himſelf to ſleep. —— In ſhort, the parſon upon ſuch encounters would aſſign any cauſe, but the true cauſe, — and he withheld the true one, only out of a nicety of temper, becauſe he thought it did honour to him.

But the truth of the ſtory was as follows: In the firſt years of this gentleman's life, and about the time when the ſuperb ſaddle and bridle were purchaſed by him, it had been his manner, or vanity, or call it what you will, — to run into the oppoſite extreme. — In the language of the country where he dwelt, he was ſaid to have loved a good horſe, and generally had one of the beſt in the whole pariſh

ſtanding in his ſtable always ready for ſaddling; and as the neareſt midwife, as I told you, did not live nearer to the village than ſeven miles, and in a vile country,—it ſo fell out that the poor gentleman was ſcarce a whole week together without ſome piteous application for his beaſt; and as he was not an unkind-hearted man, and every caſe was more preſſing and more diſtreſsful than the laſt,—as much as he loved his beaſt, he had never a heart to refuſe him; the upſhot of which was generally this, that his horſe was either clapp'd, or ſpavin'd, or greaz'd—or he was twitter-bon'd, or broken-winded, or ſomething, in ſhort, or other had befallen him which would let him carry no fleſh;—ſo that he had every nine or ten months a bad horſe to get rid of,—and a good horſe to purchaſe in his ſtead.

What the loſs in ſuch a balance might amount to *communibus annis*, I would leave to a ſpecial jury of ſufferers in the ſame traffic to determine—but let it be what it would, the honeſt gentleman bore it for many years without a murmur, till at length by repeated ill accidents of the kind, he found it neceſſary to take the thing under conſideration; and upon weighing the whole, and ſumming it up in his mind, he found it not only diſproportion'd to his other expences, but withal ſo heavy an article in itſelf, as to diſable him from any other act of generoſity in his pariſh: Beſides this he conſidered, that, with half the ſum thus galloped away, he could do ten times as much good;—and what ſtill weighed more with him than all other conſiderations put together, was this, that it confined all his charity into one particular channel,

nel, and where, as he fancied, it was the leaſt wanted, namely to the child-bearing and child-getting part of his pariſh; reſerving nothing for the impotent, — nothing for the aged, — nothing for the many comfortleſs ſcenes he was hourly called forth to viſit, where poverty, and ſickneſs, and affliction dwelt together.

For theſe reaſons he reſolved to diſcontinue the expence; and there appeared but two poſſible ways to extricate him clearly out of it? — and theſe were either to make it an irrevocable law never more to lend his ſteed upon any application whatever, — or elſe be content to ride the laſt poor devil, ſuch as they had made him, with all his aches and infirmities to the very end of the chapter.

As he dreaded his own conſtancy in the firſt, — he very chearfully betook himſelf to the ſecond; and tho' he could very well have explained it, as I ſaid, to his honour, — yet, for that very reaſon, he had a ſpirit above it; chooſing rather to bear the contempt of his enemies, and the laughter of his friends, than undergo the pain of telling a ſtory, which might ſeem a panegyric upon himſelf.

I have the higheſt idea of the ſpiritual and refined ſentiments of this reverend gentleman, from this ſingle ſtroke in his character, which I think comes up to any of the honeſt refinements of the peerleſs knight of *la Mancha*, whom, by the bye, with all his follies, I love more, and would actually have gone farther to have paid a viſit to, than the greateſt hero of antiquity.

But this is not the moral of my ſtory: The thing I had in view was to ſhew the temper of the world in the whole of this affair. — For you

muſt know, that ſo long as this explanation would have done the parſon credit — the devil a ſoul could find it out, — I ſuppoſe his enemies would not, and that his friends could not. — But no ſooner did he beſtir himſelf in behalf of the midwife, and pay the expences of the ordinary's licence to ſet her up, — but the whole ſecret came out; every horſe he had loſt, and two horſes more than ever he had loſt, with all the circumſtances of their deſtruction, were known and diſtinctly remembered. — The ſtory ran like wild-fire. — "The parſon had a re-
"turning fit of pride which had juſt ſeized
"him, and he was going to be well mounted
"once again in his life; and if it was ſo, 'twas
"plain as the ſun at noon-day, he would pock-
"et the expence of the licence ten times told
"the very firſt year — ſo that every body was
"left to judge what were his views in this act
"of charity."

What were his views in this, and in every other action of his life, — or rather what were the opinions which floated in the brains of other people concerning it was a thought which too much floated in his own, and too often broke in upon his reſt, when he ſhould have been found aſleep.

About ten years ago this gentleman had the good fortune to be made entirely eaſy upon that ſcore, — it being juſt ſo long ſince he left his pariſh, — and the whole world at the ſame time behind him, — and ſtands accountable to a judge of whom he will have no cauſe to complain.

But there is a fatality attends the actions of ſome men: Order them as they will, they paſs through a certain medium which ſo twiſts and refracts

refracts them from their true directions — that, with all the titles to praiſe which a rectitude of heart can give, the doers of them are nevertheleſs forced to live and die without it.

Of the truth of which this gentleman was a painful example. —— But to know by what means this came to paſs, — and to make that knowledge of uſe to you, I inſiſt upon it that you read the two following chapters, which contain ſuch a ſketch of his life and converſation, as will carry its moral along with it. —— When this is done, if nothing ſtops us in our way, we will go on with the midwife.

CHAP. XI.

YORICK was this parſon's name, and, what is very remarkable in it, (as appears from a moſt antient account of the family wrote upon ſtrong vellum, and now in perfect preſervation) it had been exactly ſo ſpelt for near, — I was within an ace of ſaying nine hundred years; — but I would not ſhake my credit in telling an improbable truth, however indiſputable in itſelf: — and therefore I ſhall content myſelf with only ſaying, — It had been exactly ſo ſpelt, without the leaſt variation or tranſpoſition of a ſingle letter, for I do not know how long; which is more than I would venture to ſay of one half of the beſt ſurnames in the kingdom; which, in a courſe of years, have generally undergone as many chops and changes as their owners. —— Has this been owing to the pride, or to the ſhame of their reſpective proprietors? — In honeſt truth, I think, ſometimes to the

one, and ſometimes to the other, juſt as the temptation has wrought. But a villainous affair it is, and will one day ſo blend and confound us all together, that no one ſhall be able to ſtand up and ſwear, "that his own great grand-father "was the man who did either this or that."

This evil had been ſufficiently fenced againſt by the prudent care of the *Yorick* family, and their religious preſervation of theſe records I quote, which do further inform us, that the family was originally of *Daniſh* extraction, and had been tranſplanted into *England* as early as in the reign of *Horwendillus*, king of *Denmark*, in whoſe court it ſeems, an anceſtor of this Mr. *Yorick*'s, and from whom he was lineally deſcended, held a conſiderable poſt to the day of his death. Of what nature this conſiderable poſt was, this record ſaith not — It only adds, That for near two centuries, it had been totally aboliſhed as altogether unneceſſary, not only in that court, but in every other court in the Chriſtian world.

It has often come into my head, that this poſt could be no other than that of the king's chief Jeſter; — and that *Hamlet*'s *Yorick*, in our *Shakeſpeare*, many of whoſe plays, you know are founded upon authenticated facts, — was certainly the very man.

I have not the time to look into *Saxo-Grammaticus*'s *Daniſh* hiſtory, to know the certainty of this; — but if you have leiſure, and can eaſily get at the book, you may do it full as well yourſelf.

I had juſt time in my travels through *Denmark* with Mr. *Noddy*'s eldeſt ſon, whom in the year 1741, I accompanied as governor, riding along with

with him at a prodigious rate thro' moſt parts of *Europe*, and of which original journey perform'd by us two, a moſt delectable narrative will be given in the progreſs of this work. I had juſt time, I ſay, and that was all, to prove the truth of an obſervation made by a long ſojourner in that country; — namely, "That nature was neither very laviſh, nor was ſhe very ſtingy in her gifts of genius and capacity to its inhabitants; — but, like a diſcreet parent, was moderately kind to them all; obſerving ſuch an equal tenor in the diſtribution of her favours, as to bring them, in thoſe points, pretty near to a level with each other; ſo that you will meet with few inſtances in that kingdom of refin'd parts; but a great deal of good plain houſhold underſtanding amongſt all ranks of people, of which every body has a ſhare;" which is, I think, very right.

With us, you ſee, the caſe is quite different; — we are all ups and downs in this matter; — you are a great genius; — or 'tis fifty to one, Sir, you are a great dunce and a blockhead; — not that there is a total want of intermediate ſteps, — no — we are not ſo irregular as that comes to; — but the two extremes are more common, and in a greater degree in this unſettled iſland, where nature in her gifts and diſpoſitions of this kind, is moſt whimſical and capricious; fortune herſelf not being more ſo in the bequeſt of her goods and chattles than ſhe.

This is all that ever ſtagger'd my faith in regard to *Yorick*'s extraction, who, by what I can remember of him, and by all the accounts I could ever get of him, ſeem'd not to have had one ſingle drop of *Daniſh* blood in his whole

craſis; in nine hundred years it might poſſibly have all run out:—I will not philoſophize one moment with you about it; for happen how it would, the fact was this:—That inſtead of that could phlegm and exact regularity of ſenſe and humours, you would have look'd for, in one ſo extracted;—he was, on the contrary, as mercurial and ſublimated a compoſition,—as heteroclite a creature in all his declenſions—with as much life and whim, and *gaite de cœur* about him, as the kindlieſt climate could have engendered and put together. With all this ſail, poor *Yorick* carried not one ounce of balluſt; he was utterly unpractiſed in the world; and at the age of twenty-ſix, knew juſt about as well how to ſteer his courſe in it, as a romping unſuſpicious girl of thirteen: So that upon his firſt ſetting out, the briſk gale of his ſpirits, as you will imagine, ran him foul ten times in a day of ſome body's tackling; and as the grave and more ſlow paced were oftneſt in his way;—you may likewiſe imagine, 'twas with ſuch he generally had the ill luck to get the moſt entangled. For aught I know there might be ſome mixture of unlucky wit at the bottom of ſuch *Fracas*—For, to ſpeak the truth, *Yorick* had an invincible diſlike and oppoſition in his nature to gravity;—not to gravity as ſuch—for where gravity was wanted, he would be the moſt grave and ſerious of mortal men for days and weeks together;—but he was an enemy to the affectation of it, and declared open war againſt it, only as it appeared a cloak for ignorance, or for folly; and then, whenever it fell in his way however ſheltered and protected, he ſeldom gave it much quarter.

Sometimes,

Sometimes, in his wild way of talking, he would ſay that gravity was an errant ſcoundrel; and he would add, — of the moſt dangerous kind too, — becauſe a ſly one; and that he verily believed, more honeſt, well-meaning people were bubbled out of their goods and money by it in one twelve-month, than by pocket-picking and ſhop-lifting in ſeven. In the naked temper which a merry heart diſcovered, he would ſay, There was no danger — but to itſelf: — whereas the very eſſence of gravity was deſign, and conſequently deceit; — 'twas a taught trick to gain credit of the world for more ſenſe and knowledge than a man was worth; and that, with all its pretenſions, — it was no better, but often worſe, than what a *French* wit had long ago defined it, — *viz. A myſterious carriage of the body to cover the defects of the mind*; —— which definition of gravity, *Yorick*, with great imprudence, would ſay deſerved to be wrote in letters of gold.

But, in plain truth, he was a man unhackneyed and unpractiſed in the world, and was altogether as indiſcreet and fooliſh on every other ſubject of diſcourſe where policy is wont to impreſs reſtraint. *Yorick* had no impreſſion but one, and that was what aroſe from the nature of the deed ſpoken of; which impreſſion he would uſually tranſlate into plain *Engliſh* without any periphraſis, — and too oft without much diſtinction of either perſonage, time, or place; — ſo that when mention was made of a pitiful or an ungenerous proceeding, — he never gave himſelf a moment's time to reflect who was the Hero of the piece — what his ſtation — or how far he had power to hurt him hereafter; — but if it was a dirty action, — without more ado, —

The man was a dirty fellow — and ſo on: — And as his comments had uſually the ill fate to be terminated either in a *bon mot*, or to be enliven'd throughout with ſome drollery or humour of expreſſion, it gave wings to *Yorick*'s indiſcretion. In a word, though he never ſought, yet, at the ſame time, as he ſeldom ſhun'd occaſions of ſaying what came uppermoſt, and without much ceremony, — he had but two many temptations in life, of ſcattering his wit and his humour, — his gibes and his jeſts about him. — They were not loſt for want of gathering.

What were the conſequences, and what was *Yorick*'s cataſtrophe thereupon, you will read in the next chapter.

CHAP. XII.

THE *Mortgager* and the *Mortgagee* differ the one from the other, not more in length of purſe, than the *Jeſter* and *Jeſtee* do in that of memory. But in this the compariſon between them runs, as the ſcholiaſts call it, upon all four; which by the bye, is upon one or two legs more, than ſome of the beſt of *Homer*'s can pretend to — namely, That the one raiſes a ſum and the other a laugh at your expence, and think no more about it. Intereſt, however, ſtill runs on in both caſes; — the periodical or accidental payments of it, juſt ſerving to keep the memory of the affair alive; till, at length, in ſome evil hour — pop comes the creditor upon each, and by demanding principal upon the ſpot, together with full intereſt to the very day, makes them both feel the full extent of their obligations.

As

As the reader (for I hate your *ifs*) has a thorough knowledge of human nature, I need not ſay more to ſatisfy him, that my Hero could not go on at this rate without ſome ſlight experience of theſe incidental memento's. To ſpeak the truth, he had wantonly involved himſelf in a multitude of ſmall book-debts of this ſtamp, which notwithſtanding *Eugenius*'s frequent advice, he too much diſregarded; thinking that as not one of them was contracted thro' any malignacy — but, on the contrary, from an honeſty of mind, and a mere jocundity of humour, they would all of them be croſs'd out in courſe.

Eugenius would never admit this; and would often tell him, that one day or other he would certainly be reckoned with; and he would often add in an accent of ſorrowful apprehenſion — to the uttermoſt mite. To which *Yorick*, with his uſual careleſſneſs of heart, would as often anſwer with a pſhaw! — and if the ſubject was ſtarted in the fields — with a hop, ſkip, and a jump, at the end of it; but if cloſe pent up in the ſocial chimney corner, where the culprit was barricado'd in, with a table and a couple of arm chairs, and could not ſo readily fly off in a tangent, — *Eugenius* would then go on with his lecture upon diſcretion, in words to this purpoſe, though ſomewhat better put together.

Truſt me, dear *Yorick*, this unweary pleaſantry of thine will ſooner or later bring thee into ſcrapes and difficulties, which no after-wit can extricate thee out of. —— In theſe ſallies, too oft, I ſee, it happens, that a perſon laugh'd at, conſiders himſelf in the light of a perſon injured, with all the rights of ſuch a ſituation belonging to him; and when thou viewеſt him in

that

that light too, and reckons up his friends, his family, his kindred, and allies,—and muſters up with them the many recruits which will liſt under him from a ſenſe of common danger; 'tis no extravagant arithmetic to ſay, that for every ten jokes,—thou haſt got a hundred enemies; and till thou haſt gone on, and raiſed a ſwarm of waſps about thy ears, and are half ſtung to death by them, thou wilt never be convinced it is ſo.

I cannot ſuſpect it in the man whom I eſteem, that there is the leaſt ſpur from ſpleen or malevolence of intent in theſe ſallies,—I believe and know them to be truly honeſt and ſportive:—but conſider, my dear lad, that fools cannot diſtinguiſh this, and that knaves will not; and thou knoweſt not what it is, either to provoke the one, or to make merry with the other,—whenever they aſſociate for mutual defence, depend upon it, they will carry on the war in ſuch a manner againſt thee, my dear friend, as to make thee heartily ſick of it, and of thy life too.

REVENGE from ſome baneful corner ſhall level a tale of diſhonour at thee, which no innocence of heart or integrity of conduct ſhall ſet right.—— The fortunes of thy houſe ſhall totter,—thy character, which led the way to them, ſhall bleed on every ſide of it,—thy faith queſtioned,—thy works belied—thy wit forgotten,—thy learning trampled on. To wind up the laſt ſcene of thy tragedy, CRUELTY and COWARDICE, twin ruffians, hired and ſet on by MALICE in the dark, ſhall ſtrike together at all thy infirmities and miſtakes:—the beſt of us, my dear lad, lie open there,—and truſt me,—truſt me, *Yorick, When to gratify a private appetite, it is once reſolved upon, that an innocent*

nocent and an helpleſs creature ſhall be ſacrificed, 'tis an eaſy matter to pick up ſticks anew from any thicket where it has ſtrayed, to make a fire to offer it up with.

Yorick ſcarce ever heard this ſad vaticination of his deſtiny read over to him, but with a tear ſtealing from his eye, and a promiſory look attending it, that he was reſolved, for the time to come, to ride his tit with more ſobriety.——But, alas, too late!—a grand confederacy, with ***** and ***** at the head of it, was form'd before the firſt prediction of it.——The whole plan of the attack, juſt as *Eugenius* had foreboded, was put in execution all at once,—with ſo little mercy on the ſide of the allies,—and ſo little ſuſpicion in *Yorick*, of what was carrying on againſt him,—that when he thought, good eaſy man! full ſurely preferment was o'ripening,—they had ſmote his root, and then he fell, as many a worthy man had fallen before him.

Yorick, however, fought it out with all imaginary gallantry for ſome time; till, overpower'd by numbers, and worn out at length by the calamities of the war,—but more ſo, by the ungenerous manner in which it was carried on,—he threw down the ſword; and though he kept up his ſpirits in appearance to the laſt,—he died, nevertheleſs, as was generally thought, quite broken-hearted.

What inclined *Eugenius* to the ſame opinion was as follows:

A few hours before *Yorick* breath'd his laſt, *Eugenius* ſtept in with an intent to take his laſt ſight and laſt farewell of him: Upon his drawing *Yorick*'s curtain, and aſking how he felt himſelf,

ſelf, *Yorick*, looking up in his face, took hold of his hand — and after thanking him for the many tokens of his friendſhip to him, for which he ſaid, if it was their fate to meet hereafter, — he would thank him again and again. —— He told him he was within a few hours of giving his enemies the ſlip for ever. — I hope not, anſwered *Eugenius*, with tears trickling down his cheeks, and with the tendereſt tone that ever man ſpoke, — I hope not, *Yorick*, ſaid he. — *Yorick* replied, with a look up, and a gentle ſqueeze of *Eugenius*'s hand, and that was all, — but it cut *Eugenius* to his heart. —— Come, — come, *Yorick*, quoth *Eugenius*, wiping his eyes, and ſummoning up the man within him, — my dear lad, be comforted, — let not all thy ſpirits and fortitude forſake thee at this criſis when thou moſt wants them; — who knows what reſources are in ſtore, and what the power of God may yet do for thee? — *Yorick* laid his hand upon his heart, and gently ſhook his head; — for my part continued *Eugenius*, crying bitterly as he uttered the words, — I declare I know not *Yorick*, how to part with thee, — and would gladly flatter my hopes, added *Eugenius*, chearing up his voice, that there is ſtill enough left of thee to make a biſhop, — and that I may live to ſee it. —— I beſeech thee, *Eugenius*, quoth *Yorick*, taking off his night cap as well as he could with his left-hand, — his right being ſtill graſped cloſe in that of *Eugenius*, — I beſeech thee to take a view of my head —— I ſee nothing that ails it, replied *Eugenius*. Then, alas! my friend, ſaid *Yorick*, let me tell you, that 'tis ſo bruiſed and miſſhapen'd with the blows which ***** and *****, and ſome others have ſo unhandſomely given

me

me in the dark, that I might ſay with *Sancho Pancha*, that ſhould I recover, and "Mitres "thereupon be ſuffered to rain down from "heaven as thick as hail, not one of 'em would "fit it."——*Yorick*'s laſt breath was hanging upon his trembling lips ready to depart as he utter'd this,—yet ſtill it was utter'd with ſomething of a *cervantic* tone;—and as he ſpoke it, *Eugenius* could perceive a ſtream of lambent fire lighted up for a moment in his eyes;—faint picture of thoſe flaſhes of his ſpirit, which (as *Shakeſpeare* ſaid of his anceſtor) were wont to ſet the table in a roar!

Eugenius was convinced from this, that the heart of his friend was broke; he ſqueez'd his hand,—and then walk'd ſoftly out of the room, weeping as he walk'd. *Yorick* followed *Eugenius* with his eyes to the door,——he then cloſed them,—and never opened them more.

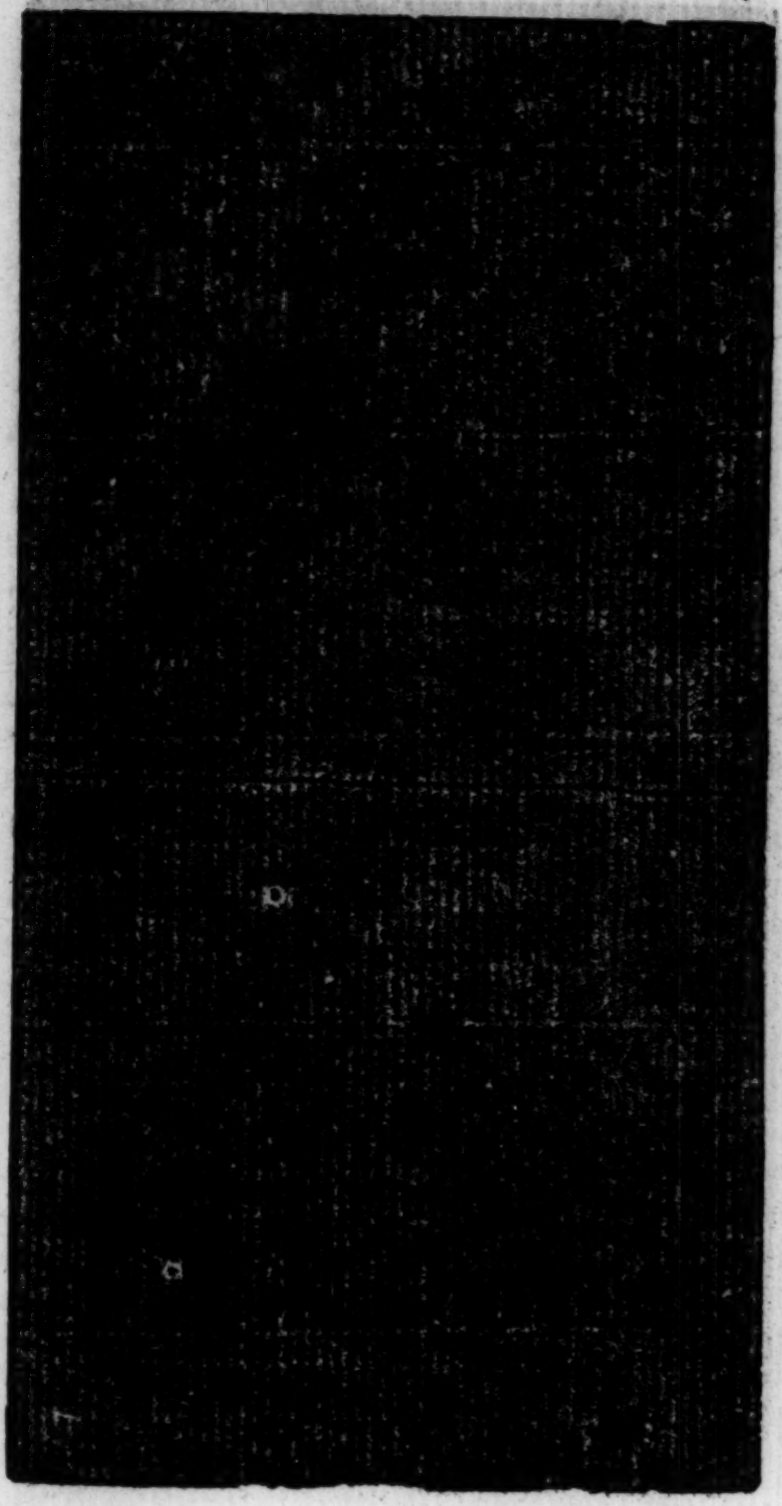
He lies buried in a corner of his church-yard, in the pariſh of ————, under a plain marble ſlabb, which his friend *Eugenius*, by leave of his executors, laid upon his grave, with no more than theſe three words of inſcription ſerving both for his epitaph and elegy.

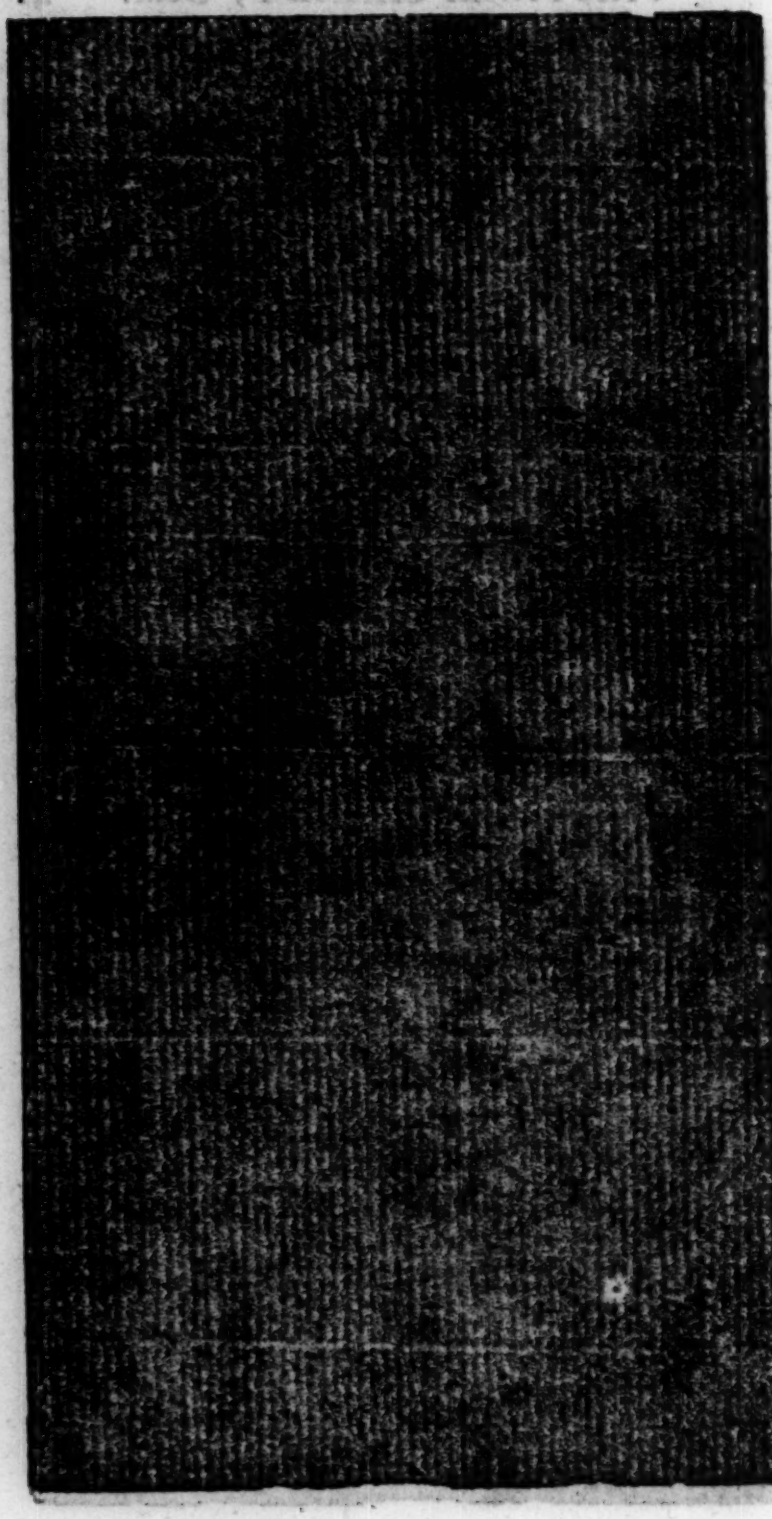
Alas, poor YORICK!

Ten times in a day has *Yorick*'s ghoſt the conſolation to hear his monumental inſcription read over with ſuch a variety of plaintive tones, as denote a general pity and eſteem for him; ——a foot-way croſſing the church-yard cloſe by the ſide of his grave,—not a paſſenger goes by without ſtopping to caſt a look upon it,—and ſighing as he walks on,

Alas, poor YORICK!

CHAP.





CHAP. XIII.

IT is ſo long ſince the reader of this rhapſodical work has been parted from the midwife, that it is high time to mention her again to him, merely to put him in mind that there is ſuch a body ſtill in the world, and whom, upon the beſt judgment I can form upon my own plan at preſent, — I am going to introduce to him for good and all: But as freſh matter may be ſtarted, and much unexpected buſineſs fall out betwixt the reader and myſelf which may require immediate diſpatch; — 'twas right to take care that the poor woman ſhould not be loſt in the mean time; — becauſe when ſhe is wanted we can no way do without her.

I think I told you that this good woman was a perſon of no ſmall note and conſequence throughout our whole village and townſhip; — that her fame had ſpread itſelf to the very out-edge and circumference of that circle of importance, of which kind every ſoul living, whether he has a ſhirt to his back or no — has one ſurrounding him; — which ſaid circle, by the way, whenever 'tis ſaid that ſuch a one is of great weight and importance in the *world*, I deſire may be enlarged or contracted in your worſhip's fancy, in a compound-ratio of the ſtation, profeſſion, knowledge, abilities, height and depth (meaſuring both ways) of the perſonage brought before you.

In the preſent caſe, if I remember, I fixed it at about four or five miles, which not only comprehended the whole pariſh, but extended itſelf

to

to two or three of the adjacent hamlets in the ſkirts of the next pariſh; which made a conſiderable thing of it. I muſt add, that ſhe was, moreover, very well looked on at one large grange houſe and ſome other odd houſes and farms within two or three miles, as I ſaid, from the ſmoke of her own chimney:——But I muſt here, once for all, inform you, that all this will be more exactly delineated and explain'd in a map now in the hands of the engraver, which, with many other pieces and developments to this work will be added to the end of the twentieth volume,—not to ſwell the work,—I deteſt the thought of ſuch a thing—but by way of commentary, ſcholium, illuſtration, and key to ſuch paſſages, incidents, or innuendos as ſhall be thought to be either of private interpretation, or of dark or doubtful meaning after my life and my opinions ſhall have been read over (now don't forget the meaning of the word) by all the *world*;—which betwixt you and me, and in ſpight of all the gentlemen reviewers in *Great-Britain*, and of all that their worſhips ſhall undertake to write or ſay to the contrary,—I am determined ſhall be the caſe.——I need not tell your worſhip, that all this is ſpoke in confidence.

CHAP. XIV.

UPON looking into my mother's marriage ſettlement, in order to ſatisfy myſelf and reader in a point neceſſary to be clear'd up, before we could proceed any further in this hiſtory;—I had the good fortune to pop upon the very thing I wanted before I had read a day and a half ſtraight

ſtraight forwards, — it might have taken me up a month — which ſhews plainly, that when a man ſits down to write a hiſtory, — tho' it be but the hiſtory of *Jack Hickathrift* or *Tom Thumb*, he knows no more than his heels what lets and confounded hinderances he is to meet with in his way, — or what a dance he may be led, by one excurſion or another, before all is over. Could an hiſtoriographer drive on his hiſtory, as a muleteer drives on his mule — ſtraight forward; — for inſtance, from *Rome* all the way to *Loretto*, without ever once turning his head aſide either to the right hand or to the left, — he might venture to foretell you to an hour when he ſhould get to his journey's end, —— but the thing is, morally ſpeaking, impoſſible: for if he is a man of the leaſt ſpirit, he will have fifty deviations from a ſtraight line to make with this or that party as he goes along, which he can no ways avoid. He will have views and proſpects to himſelf perpetually ſoliciting his eye, which he can no more help ſtanding ſtill to look at than he can fly; he will moreover have various

Accounts to reconcile:
Anecdotes to pick up:
Inſcriptions to make out:
Stories to wave in:
Traditions to ſift:
Perſonages to call upon:
Panegyrics to paſte up at this door:

Paſquinades at that: —— All which both the man and the mule are quite exempt from. To ſum up all; there are archives at every ſtage to be look'd into, and rolls, records, documents, and endleſs genealogies, which juſtice ever and anon calls him back to ſtay the reading of — In

ſhort,

ſhort, there is no end of it; — for my own part, I declare I have been at it theſe ſix weeks, making all the ſpeed I poſſibly could, — and am not yet born: — I have juſt been able, and that's all, to tell you *when* it happen'd, but not *how*; — ſo that you ſee the thing is yet far from being accompliſhed.

Theſe unforeſeen ſtoppages, which I own I had no conception of when I firſt ſet out — but which, I am convinced now, will rather encreaſe than diminiſh as I advance, — have ſtruck out a hint which I am reſolved to follow; — and that is, — not to be in a hurry; — but to go on leiſurely, writing and publiſhing two volumes of my life every year, — which, if I am ſuffered to go on quietly, and can make a tolerable bargain with my bookſeller, I ſhall continue to do as long as I live.

CHAP. XV.

THE article in my mother's marriage ſettlement, which I told the reader I was at the pains to ſearch for, and which, now that I have found it, I think proper to lay before him, — is ſo much more fully expreſs'd in the deed itſelf, than ever I can pretend to do it, that it would be barbarity to take it out of the lawyer's hand: — It is as follows.

" AND THIS INDENTURE FUR-
" THER WITNESSETH, That the ſaid
" *Walter Shandy*, merchant, in conſideration of
" the ſaid intended marriage to be had, and by
" God's bleſſing to be well and truly ſolem-
" nized and conſummated between the ſaid
" *Walter*

" *Walter Shandy* and *Elizabeth Mollineux*, a-
" foreſaid, and divers other good and valuable
" cauſes and conſiderations him thereunto ſpe-
" cially moving,——doth grant, covenant,
" condeſcend, conſent, conclude, bargain, and
" fully agree to and with *John Dixon* and *James*
" *Turner*, Eſqrs. the above-named truſtees,
" *&c. &c.*——TO WIT,—That in caſe it
" ſhould hereafter ſo fall out, chance, happen,
" or otherwiſe come to paſs,—That the ſaid
" *Walter Shandy*, merchant, ſhall have left off
" buſineſs before the time or times, that the
" ſaid *Elizabeth Mollineux* ſhall, according to
" the courſe of nature, or otherwiſe, have left
" off bearing and bringing forth children;—
" and that, in conſequence of the ſaid *Walter*
" *Shandy* having ſo left off buſineſs, ſhall, in
" deſpight, and againſt the free will, conſent,
" and good-liking of the ſaid *Elizabeth Molli-*
" *neux*,—— make a departure from the city of
" *London*, in order to retire to, and dwell up-
" on, his eſtate at *Shandy-Hall*, in the county
" of ——————, or at any other country-ſeat
" caſtle, hall, manſion-houſe, meſſuage, or
" grange-houſe, now purchaſed, or hereafter to
" be purchaſed, or upon any part or parcel there-
" of:—That then, and as often as the ſaid *Eli-*
" *zabeth Mollineux* ſhall happen to be enceint
" with child or children ſeverally and lawfully
" begot, or to begotten, upon the body of the
" ſaid *Elizabeth Mollineux* during her ſaid cover-
" ture,—he the ſaid *Walter Shandy* ſhall, at his
" own proper coſt and charges, and out of his
" own proper monies, upon good and reaſonable
" notice, which is hereby agreed to be within
" ſix weeks of her the ſaid *Elizabeth Mollineux*'s

" full

" full reckoning, or time of ſuppoſed and com-
" puted delivery, — pay or cauſe to be paid, the
" ſum of one hundred and twenty pounds of
" good and lawful money, to *John Dixon* and
" *James Turner*, Eſqrs. or aſſigns, —— upon
" TRUST and confidence, and for and unto
" the uſe and uſes, intent, end, and purpoſe
" following: —— THAT IS TO SAY, —
" That the ſaid ſum of one hundred and twen-
" ty pounds ſhall be paid into the hands of the
" ſaid *Elizabeth Mollineux*, or to be otherwiſe
" applied by them the ſaid truſtees, for the well
" and truly hiring of one coach, with able and
" ſufficient horſes, to carry and convey the body
" of the ſaid *Elizabeth Mollineux* and the child
" or children which ſhe ſhall be then and there
" enceint and pregnant with, — unto the city of
" *London*; and for the further paying and de-
" fraying of all other incidental coſts, charges,
" and expences whatſoever, — in and about, and
" for, and relating to her ſaid intended delivery
" and lying-in, in the ſaid city or ſuburbs there-
" of. And that the ſaid *Elizabeth Mollineux*
" ſhall and may from time to time, and at all
" ſuch time and times as are here covenanted and
" agreed upon, — peaceably and quietly hire the
" ſaid coach and horſes, and have free ingreſs,
" egreſs and regreſs throughout her journey, in
" and from the ſaid coach, according to the te-
" nor, true intent, and meaning of theſe pre-
" ſents, without any let, ſuit, trouble, diſturb-
" ance, moleſtation, diſcharge, hinderance,
" forfeiture, eviction, vexation, interruption,
" or incumbrance whatſoever. —— And that
" it ſhall moreover be lawful to and for the
" ſaid *Elizabeth Mollineux*, from time to time,

" and

" and as oft or often as ſhe ſhall well and truly
" be advanced in her ſaid pregnancy, to the
" time heretofore ſtipulated and agreed upon, —
" to live and reſide in ſuch place or places, and
" in ſuch family or families, and with ſuch re-
" lations, friends, and other perſons within the
" ſaid city of *London*, as ſhe, at her own will
" and pleaſure, notwithſtanding her preſent co-
" verture, and as if ſhe was a *femme ſole* and
" unmarried, —— ſhall think fit. ——— AND
" THIS INDENTURE FURTHER WIT-
" NESSETH, That for the more effectually
" carrying of the ſaid covenant into execution,
" the ſaid *Walter Shandy*, merchant, doth here-
" by grant, bargain, ſell, releaſe, and confirm
" unto the ſaid *John Dixon* and *James Turner*,
" Eſqrs. their heirs, executors, and aſſigns, in
" their actual poſſeſſion, now being by virtue of
" an indenture of bargain and ſale for a year to
" them the ſaid *John Dixon* and *James Turner*,
" Eſqrs. by him the ſaid *Walter Shandy*, mer-
" chant, thereof made; which ſaid bargain and
" ſale for a year, bears date the day next be-
" fore the date of theſe preſents, and by force
" and virtue of the ſtatute for transferring of
" uſes into poſſeſſion, —— ALL that the ma-
" nor and lordſhip of *Shandy*, in the county of
" ———, with all the rights, members, and
" appurtenances thereof; and all and every the
" meſſuages, houſes, buildings, barns, ſtables,
" orchards, gardens, backſides, tofts, crofts,
" garths, cottages, lands, meadows, feedings,
" paſtures, marſhes, commons, woods, un-
" derwoods, drains, fiſheries, waters and wa-
" ter-courſes, —— together with all rents
" reverſions, ſervices, annuities, fee-farms,

" knights fees, views of frank-pledge, eſcheats,
" reliefs, mines, quarries, goods and chattels
" of felons and fugitives, felons of themſelves,
" and put in exigent, deodands, free warrens,
" and all other royalties and ſeignories, rights,
" and juriſdictions, privileges and hereditaments whatſoever. —— AND ALSO the
" advowſon, donation, preſentation and free
" diſpoſition of the rectory or parſonage of
" *Shandy* aforeſaid, and all and every the tenths,
" tythes, glebe-lands" —— In three words, —
" My mother was to lie in, (if ſhe choſe it)
" in *London*."

But in order to put a ſtop to the practice of any unfair play on the part of my mother, which a marriage article of this nature too manifeſtly opened a door to, and which indeed had never been thought of at all, but for my uncle *Toby Shandy*; — a clauſe was added in ſecurity of my father, which was this: — " That in caſe my
" mother hereafter ſhould, at any time, put my
" father to the trouble and expence of a *London*
" journey upon falſe cries and tokens; — that
" for every ſuch inſtance ſhe ſhould forfeit all
" the right and title which the covenant gave
" her to the next turn; — but to no more, —
" and ſo on, *toties quoties*, in as effectual a man-
" ner, as if ſuch a covenant betwixt them had
" not been made." — This by the way, was no more than what was reaſonable; — and yet, as reaſonable as it was, I have ever thought it hard that the whole weight of the article ſhould have fallen entirely, as it did, upon myſelf.

But I was begot and born to misfortunes; — for my poor mother, whether it was wind or water, — or a compound of both, — or neither; —

or

or whether it was ſimply the mere ſwell of imagination and fancy in her; — or how far a ſtrong wiſh and deſire to have it ſo, might miſlead her judgment; — in ſhort, whether ſhe was deceived or deceiving in this matter, it no way becomes me to decide. The fact was this, that in the latter end of *September*, 1717, which was the year before I was born, my mother having carried my father up to town much againſt the grain, — he peremptorily inſiſted upon the clauſe; — ſo that I was doom'd, by marriage articles, to have my noſe ſqueez'd as flat to my face, as if the deſtinies had actually ſpun me without one.

How this event came about, — and what a train of vexatious diſappointments, in one ſtage or other of my life, have purſued me from the mere loſs, or rather compreſſion of this one ſingle member, — ſhall be laid before the reader all in due time.

CHAP. XVI.

MY father, as any body may naturally imagine, came down with my mother into the country, in but a pettiſh kind of a humour. The firſt twenty or five-and-twenty miles he did nothing in the world but fret and teaze himſelf, and indeed my mother too, about the curſed expence, which he ſaid might every ſhilling of it have been ſaved; — then what vexed him more than every thing elſe, was the provoking time of the year, — which, as I told you, was towards the end of *September*, when his wall-fruit, and green gages eſpecially, in which he was very curious, were juſt ready for pulling — "Had

" he been whiſtled up to *London*, upon a *Tom*
" *Fool*'s errand in any other month of the whole
" year, he ſhould not have ſaid three words
" about it."

For the next two whole ſtages, no ſubject would go down, but the heavy blow he had ſuſtained from the loſs of a ſon, whom it ſeems he had fully reckoned upon in his mind, and regiſtered down in his pocket-book; as a ſecond ſtaff for his old age, in caſe *Bobby* ſhould fail him. " The diſappointment of this, he ſaid, was ten
" times more to a wiſe man than all the money
" which the journey, *&c.* had coſt him, put
" together,—— rot the hundred and twenty
" pounds — he did not mind it a ruſh."

From *Stilton* all the way to *Grantham*, nothing in the whole affair provoked him ſo much as the condolences of his friends, and the fooliſh figure they ſhould both make at church the firſt *Sunday*; — of which, in the ſatirical vehemence of his wit, now ſharpened a little by vexation, he would give ſo many humorous and provoking deſcriptions, — and place his rib and ſelf in ſo many tormenting lights and attitudes in the face of the whole congregation; — that my mother declared theſe two ſtages were ſo truly tragi-comical, that ſhe did nothing but laugh and cry in a breath, from one end to the other of them all the way.

From *Grantham*, till they had croſſed the *Trent*, my father was out of all kind of patience at the vile trick and impoſition which he fancied my mother had put upon him in this affair — " Certainly," he would ſay to himſelf, over and over again, " the woman could not be de-
" ceived herſelf; — if ſhe could, — what weak-
" neſs!"

"neſs!" — tormenting word! which led his imagination a thorny dance, and, before all was over, played the deuce and all with him — for ſure as ever the word *weakneſs* was uttered and ſtruck full upon his brain — ſo ſure it ſet him upon running diviſions upon how many kinds of weakneſſes there were; — that there was ſuch a thing as weakneſs of the body, — as well as weakneſs of the mind, — and then he would do nothing but ſyllogize within himſelf for a ſtage or two together, how far the cauſe of all theſe vexations might, or might not, have ariſen out of himſelf.

In ſhort, he had ſo many little ſubjects of diſquietude ſpringing out of this one affair, all fretting ſucceſſively in his mind as they roſe up in it, that my mother, whatever was her journey up, had but an uneaſy journey of it down — In a word, as ſhe complained to my uncle *Toby*, he would have tired out the patience of any fleſh alive.

CHAP. XVII.

THOUGH my father travelled homewards as I told you, in none of the beſt of moods, — pſhaw-ing and piſh-ing all the way down, — yet he had the complaiſance to keep the worſt part of the ſtory ſtill to himſelf; — which was the reſolution he had taken of doing himſelf the juſtice, which my uncle *Toby*'s clauſe in the marriage ſettlement empowered him; nor was it till the very night in which I was begot, which was thirteen months after, that ſhe had the leaſt intimation of his deſign; —— when my father,

happening, as you remember, to be a little chagrined and out of temper, — took occaſion as they lay chatting gravely in bed afterwards, talking over what was to come, — to let her know that ſhe muſt accommodate herſelf as well as ſhe could to the bargain made between them in their marriage deeds; which was to lye-in of her next child in the country; to balance the laſt year's journey.

My father was a gentleman of many virtues, — but he had a ſtrong ſpice of that in his temper which might, or might not add to the number. —— 'Tis known by the name of perſeverance in a good cauſe, and of obſtinacy in a bad one: Of this my mother had ſo much knowledge, that ſhe knew 'twas to no purpoſe to make any remonſtrance, — ſo ſhe e'en reſolved to ſit down quietly, and make the moſt of it.

CHAP. XVIII.

AS the point was that night agreed, or rather determined, that my mother ſhould lye-in of me in the country, ſhe took her meaſures accordingly; for which purpoſe, when ſhe was three days, or thereabouts, gone with child, ſhe began to caſt her eyes upon the midwife whom you have ſo often heard me mention; and before the week was well got round, as the famous Dr. *Maningham* was not to be had, ſhe had come to a final determination in her mind, — notwithſtanding there was a ſcientific operator within ſo near a call as eight miles of us, and who moreover, had expreſly wrote a five ſhillings book upon the ſubject of midwifery, in which he had expoſed,

expoſed, not only the blunders of the ſiſterhood itſelf, — but had alſo ſuperadded many curious improvements for the quicker extraction of the fœtus in croſs births, and ſome other caſes of danger which delay us in getting into the world; notwithſtanding all this, my mother, I ſay, was abſolutely determined to truſt her life and mine with it, into no ſoul's hand but this old woman's only. — Now this I like — when we cannot get at the very thing we wiſh, — never to take up with the next beſt in degree to it; — no, that's pitiful beyond deſcription; — it is no more than a week from this very day, in which I am now writing this book for the edification of the world, — which is *March* 9, 1759, — that my dear, dear *Jenny* obſerving I looked a little grave, as ſhe ſtood cheapening a ſilk of five and twenty ſhillings a yard, — told the mercer, ſhe was ſorry ſhe had given him ſo much trouble; — and immediately went and bought herſelf a yard-wide ſtuff of ten-pence a yard. — 'Tis the duplication of one and the ſame greatneſs of ſoul; only what leſſened the honour of it ſomewhat, in my mother's caſe, was, that ſhe could not heroine it into ſo violent and hazardous an extream, as one in her ſituation might have wiſhed, becauſe the old midwife had really ſome little claim to be depended upon, — as much, at leaſt, as ſucceſs could give her; having, in the courſe of her practice of near twenty years in the pariſh, brought every mother's ſon of them into the world without any one ſlip or accident which could fairly be laid to her account.

Theſe facts, tho' they had their weight, yet did not altogether ſatisfy ſome few ſcruples and uneaſineſſes which hung upon my father's ſpirits

in relation to this choice. To ſay nothing of the natural workings of humanity and juſtice, or of the yearnings of parental and connubial love, all which prompted him, to leave as little to hazard as poſſible in a caſe of this kind; — he felt himſelf concerned in a particular manner, that all ſhould go right in the preſent caſe — from the accumulated ſorrow he lay open to ſhould any evil betide his wife and child in lying-in at *Shandy-hall*. — He knew the world judged by events, and would add to his afflictions in ſuch a misfortune, by loading him with the whole blame of it. — "Alas o'day! — had Mrs. *Shandy*, poor "gentlewoman! had but her wiſh in going up "to town juſt to lye-in and come down again; "— which, they ſay, ſhe begged and prayed for "upon her bare knees, — and which, in my "opinion, conſidering the fortune which Mr. "*Shandy* got with her, — was no ſuch mighty "matter to have complied with, the lady and "her babe might both of 'em have been alive "at this hour."

This exclamation my father knew was unanſwerable; — and yet, it was not merely to ſhelter himſelf, — nor was it altogether for care of his offſpring and wife that he ſeemed ſo extremely anxious about this point; — my father had extenſive views of things, — and ſtood, moreover, as he thought, deeply concerned in it for the publick good, from the dread he entertained of the bad uſes an ill-fated inſtance might be put to.

He was very ſenſible that all political writers upon the ſubject had unanimouſly agreed and lamented, from the beginning of Queen *Elizabeth*'s reign down to his own time, that the current of men and money towards the metropolis upon

upon one frivolous errand or another,—ſet in ſo ſtrong;—as to become dangerous to our civil rights;—tho', by the bye,—a *current* was not the image he took moſt delight in,—a *diſtemper* was here his favourite metaphor, and he would run it down into a perfect allegory, by maintaining it was identically the ſame in the body national as in the body natural, where blood and ſpirits were driven up into the head faſter than they could find their ways down;—a ſtoppage of circulation muſt enſue, which was death in both caſes.

There was little danger, he would ſay, of loſing our liberties by *French* politics or *French* invaſions;—nor was he ſo much in pain of a conſumption from the maſs of corrupted matter and ulcerated humours in our conſtitution,—— which he hoped was not ſo bad as it was imagined;—but he verily feared, that in ſome violent puſh, we ſhould go off, all at once, in a ſtate apoplexy—and then he would ſay, *The Lord have mercy upon us all.*

My father was never able to give the hiſtory of this diſtemper,—without the remedy along with it.

"Was I an abſolute prince," he would ſay, pulling up his breeches, with both his hands, as he roſe from his arm-chair, "I would appoint "able judges, at every avenue of my metropo- "lis, who ſhould take cognizance of every "fool's buſineſs who came there; and if, upon "a fair and candid hearing, it appeared not of "weight ſufficient to leave his own home, and "come up, bag and baggage, with his wife and "children, farmers ſons, *&c. &c.* at his back- "ſide, they ſhould be all ſent back from conſta-

" ble to conſtable, like vagrants, as they were,
" to the place of their legal ſettlements. By
" this means, I ſhall take care, that my metro-
" polis tottered not thro' its own weight, — that
" the head be no longer too big for the body;
" — that the extreams, now waſted and pinned
" in, be reſtored to their due ſhare of nouriſh-
" ment, and regain, with it, their natural
" ſtrength and beauty: —— I would effectually
" provide, That the meadows and corn-fields,
" of my dominions, ſhould laugh and ſing; —
" that good cheer and hoſpitality flouriſh once
" more; — and that ſuch weight and influence
" be put thereby into the hands of the Squiral-
" ity of my kingdom, as ſhould counterpoiſe
" what I perceive my Nobility are now taking
" from them.

" Why are there ſo few palaces and gentle-
" mens ſeats," he would aſk, with ſome emo-
tion, as he walked acroſs the room, " through-
" out ſo many delicious provinces in *France?*
" Whence is it that the few remaining *Chateaus*
" amonſt them are ſo diſmantled, — ſo unfur-
" niſhed, and in ſo ruinous and deſolate a con-
" dition? — Becauſe, Sir, (he would ſay) in
" that kingdom no man has any country intereſt
" to ſupport; — the little intereſt of any kind,
" which any man has any where in it, is con-
" centrated in the court, and the looks of the
" Grand Monarch; by the ſun-ſhine of whoſe
" countenance, or the clouds which paſs acroſs
" it, every *French* man lives or dies."

Another political reaſon which prompted my father ſo ſtrongly to guard againſt the leaſt evil accident in my mother's lying in in the country, — was, That any ſuch inſtance would infallibly throw

throw a balance of power, too great already, into the weaker veſſels of the gentry, in his own, or higher ſtations; — which, with the many other uſurped rights which that part of the conſtitution was hourly eſtabliſhing, — would in the end prove fatal to the monarchical ſyſtem of domeſtic government eſtabliſhed in the firſt creation of things by God.

In this point he was entirely of Sir *Robert Filmer*'s opinion. That the plans and inſtitutions of the greateſt monarchies in the eaſtern parts of the world, were, originally, all ſtolen from that admirable pattern and prototype of this houſhold and paternal power; — which, for a century, he ſaid, and more, had gradually been degenerating away into a mixed government; — the form of which, however deſirable in great combinations of the ſpecies, — was very troubleſome in ſmall ones, — and ſeldom produced any thing, that he ſaw, but ſorrow and confuſion.

For all theſe reaſons, private and public, put together, — my father was for having the man-midwife by all means, — my mother by no means. My father begged and intreated, ſhe would for once recede from her prerogative in this matter, and ſuffer him to chooſe for her; — my mother on the contrary, inſiſted upon her privilege in this matter, to chooſe for herſelf, — and have no mortal's help but the old woman's. — What could my father do? He was almoſt at his wit's end; — talked it over with her in all moods; — placed his arguments in all lights; — argued the matter with her like a chriſtian, — like a heathen, — like a huſband, — like a father, — like a patriot, — like a man: —— My mother anſwered every thing only like a woman; which was a little hard upon her; — for as ſhe could

not aſſume and fight it out behind ſuch a variety of characters, — 'twas no fair match; — 'twas ſeven to one. —— What could my mother do? —— She had the advantage (otherwiſe ſhe had been certainly overpowered) of a ſmall reinforcement of chagrin perſonal at the bottom which bore her up, and enabled her to diſpute the affair with my father with ſo equal an advantage, — that both ſides ſung *Te Deum*. In a word, my mother was to have the old woman, — and the operator was to have licence to drink a bottle of wine with my father and my uncle *Toby Shandy* in the back parlour, — for which he was to be paid five guineas.

I muſt beg leave, before I finiſh this chapter, to enter a caveat in the breaſt of my fair reader, —— and it is this: — Not to take it abſolutely for granted from an unguarded word or two which I have dropped in it, — "That I am a "married man." —— I own the tender appellation of my dear, dear *Jenny*, — with ſome other ſtrokes of conjugal knowledge, interſperſed here and there, might naturally enough, have miſled the moſt candid judge in the world into ſuch a determination againſt me. — All I plead for in this caſe, Madam, is ſtrict juſtice, and that you do ſo much of it, to me as well as to yourſelf, — as not to prejudge or receive ſuch an impreſſion of me, till you have better evidence, than I am poſitive, at preſent, can be produced againſt me: — Not that I can be ſo vain or unreaſonable, Madam, as to deſire you ſhould therefore think, that my dear, dear *Jenny* is my kept miſtreſs, — no, — that would be flattering my character in the other extream, and giving it an air of freedom, which,

perhaps,

perhaps, it has no kind of right to. All I contend for, is the utter impoſſibility for ſome volumes, that you, or the moſt penetrating ſpirit upon earth, ſhould know how this matter really ſtands. — It is not impoſſible, but that my dear, dear *Jenny!* tender as the appellation is, may be my child. — Conſider, — I was born in the year eighteen. — Nor is there any thing unnatural or extravagant in the ſuppoſition, that my dear *Jenny* may be my friend. —— Friend! — My friend. — Surely, Madam, a friendſhip between the two ſexes may ſubſiſt, and be ſupported without —— Fy! Mr. *Shandy:* — without any thing, Madam, but that tender and delicious ſentiment, which ever mixes in friendſhip where there is a difference of ſex. Let me entreat you to ſtudy the pure and ſentimental parts of the beſt *French* Romances; — it will really, Madam, aſtoniſh you to ſee with what a variety of chaſte expreſſion this delicious ſentiment, which I have the honour to ſpeak of, is dreſſed out.

CHAP. XIX.

I Would ſooner undertake to explain the hardeſt problem in Geometry, than pretend to account for it, that a gentleman of my father's great good ſenſe, — knowing, as the reader muſt have obſerved him, and curious too, in philoſophy — wiſe alſo in political reaſoning, — and in polemical (as he will find) no way ignorant, — could be capable of entertaining a notion in his head, ſo out of the common track, — that I fear the reader, when I come to mention

tion it to him, if he is the leaſt of a choleric temper, will immediately throw the book by; if mercurial, he will laugh moſt heartily at it; —and if he is of a grave and ſaturnine caſt, he will, at firſt ſight, abſolutely condemn as fanciful and extravagant; and that was in reſpect to the choice and impoſition of Chriſtian names, on which he thought a great deal more depended than what ſuperficial minds were capable of conceiving.

His opinion, in this matter, was, That there was a ſtrange kind of magic bias, which good or bad names, as he called them, irreſiſtibly impreſſed upon our characters and conduct.

The Hero of *Cervantes* argued not the point with more ſerioufneſs,—nor had he more faith, —or more to ſay on the power of Necromancy in diſhonouring his deeds,—or on DULCINEA's name, in ſhedding luſtre upon them, than my father had on thoſe of TRISMEGISTUS or ARCHIMEDES, on the one hand—or of NYKY and SIMKIN on the other. How many CÆSARS and POMPEYS, he would ſay, by mere inſpiration of the names, have been rendered worthy of them? And how many, he would add, are there who might have done exceeding well in the world, had not their characters and ſpirits been totally depreſſed and NICODEMUS'D into nothing.

I ſee plainly, Sir, by your looks, (or as the caſe happened) my father would ſay,—that you do not heartily ſubſcribe to this opinion of mine, —which to thoſe, he would add, who have not carefully ſifted it to the bottom,—I own has an air more of fancy than of ſolid reaſoning in it;——and yet, my dear Sir, if I

may

may preſume to know your character, I am morally aſſured, I ſhould hazard little in ſtating a caſe to you, — not as a party in the diſpute, — but as a judge, and truſting my appeal upon it to your own good ſenſe and candid diſquiſition in this matter; — you are a perſon free from as many narrow prejudices of education as moſt men; — and, if I may preſume to penetrate further into you, — of a liberality of genius above bearing down an opinion, merely becauſe it wants friends. Your ſon! — your dear ſon, — from whoſe ſweet and open temper you have ſo much to expect — Your BILLY, Sir, — would you for the world have called him JUDAS? — Would you, my dear Sir, he would ſay, laying his hand upon your breaſt, with the genteeleſt addreſs, — and in that ſoft and irreſiſtible *piano* of voice, which the nature of the *argumentum ad hominem* abſolutely requires, — Would you, Sir, if a *Jew* of a godfather had propoſed the name for your child, and offered you his purſe along with it, would you have conſented to ſuch a deſecration of him? —— O my God! he would ſay, looking up if I know your temper right, Sir, — you are incapable of it; — you would have trampled upon the offer; — you would have thrown the temptation at the tempter's head with abhorrence.

Your greatneſs of mind in this action, which I admire, with that generous contempt of money which you ſhew me in the whole tranſaction, is really noble; — and what renders it more ſo, is the principle of it; — the workings of a parent's love upon the truth and conviction of this very hypotheſis, namely, That was your ſon called JUDAS, — the ſordid and treacherous idea,

idea, ſo inſeparable from the name, would have accompanied him thro' life like his ſhadow, and in the end, made a miſer and a raſcal of him, in ſpite, Sir, of your example.

I never knew a man able to anſwer this argument —— But, indeed, to ſpeak of my father as he was; he was certainly irreſiſtible, both in his orations and diſputations; he was born an orator: —— Περσουασιον —— Perſuaſion hung upon his lips, and the elements of Logic and Rhetoric were ſo blended up in him, — and, withal, he had ſo ſhrewd a gueſs at the weakneſſes and paſſions of his reſpondent, — that NATURE might have ſtood up and ſaid, — "This man is eloquent." In ſhort, whether he was on the weak or the ſtrong ſide of the queſtion, 'twas hazardous in either caſe to attack him: — And yet, 'tis ſtrange, he had never read *Cicero* nor *Quintilian de Oratore*, nor *Iſocrates*, nor *Ariſtotle*, nor *Longinus* amongſt the ancients; — nor *Voſſius*, nor *Skioppius*, nor *Ramus*, nor *Farnaby* amongſt the moderns; —— and what is more aſtoniſhing, he had never in his whole life the leaſt light or ſpark of ſubtilty ſtruck into his mind, by one ſingle lecture upon *Crackenthorp* or *Burgerſdicius*, or any *Dutch* logician or commentator; — he knew not ſo much as in what the difference of an argument *ad ignorantiam*, and an argument *ad hominem* conſiſted; ſo that I well remember, when he went up along with me to enter my name at *Jeſus College* in ****, — it was a matter of juſt wonder with my worthy tutor, and two or three fellows of that learned ſociety, that a man who knew not ſo much as the names of his tools, ſhould be able to work after that faſhion with 'em.

To

To work with them in the beſt manner he could, was what my father was, however, perpetually forced upon;—for he had a thouſand little ſceptical notions of the comic kind to defend,—moſt of which notions, I verily believe at firſt entered upon the footing of mere whims, and of a *vive la Bagatelle*; and as ſuch he would make merry with them for half an hour or ſo, and having ſharpened his wit upon 'em, diſmiſs them, till another day.

I mention this, not only as matter of hypotheſis or conjecture upon the progreſs and eſtabliſhment of my father's many odd opinions, but as a warning to the learned reader againſt the indiſcreet reception of ſuch gueſts, who, after a free and undiſturbed enterance for ſome years, into our brains, at length claim a kind of ſettlement there,—working ſometimes like yeaſt;—but more generally after the manner of the gentle paſſion, beginning in jeſt,—but ending in downright earneſt.

Whether this was the caſe of the ſingularity of my father's notions, or that his judgment, at length, became the dupe of his wit; or how far, in many of his notions, he might, though odd, be abſolutely right;—the reader, as he comes at them, ſhall decide. All that I maintain here, is, that in this one, of the influence of Chriſtian names, however it gained footing, he was ſerious;—he was all uniformity;—he was ſyſtematical, and like all ſyſtematic reaſoners, he would move both heaven and earth, and twiſt and torture every thing in nature to ſupport his hypotheſis. In a word, I repeat it over again;—he was ſerious;—and, in conſequence of it, he would loſe all

kind

kind of patience whenever he ſaw people, eſpecially of condition, who ſhould have known better, — as careleſs and as indifferent about the name they impoſed upon their child, or more ſo, than in the choice of *Ponto* or *Cupid* for their puppy dog.

This, he would ſay, looked ill; —— and had, moreover, this particular aggravation, in it, *viz.* That when once a vile name was wrongfully or injudiciouſly given, 'twas not like the caſe of a man's character, which, when wronged, might hereafter be cleared; — and, poſſibly, ſometime or other, if not in the man's life, at leaſt after his death, be, ſomehow or other, ſet to rights with the world: But the injury of this, he would ſay, could never be undone; — nay, he doubted even whether an act of parliament could reach it: —— He knew as well as you, that the legiſlature aſſumed a power over ſurnames; — but for very ſtrong reaſons, which he could give, it had never yet adventured, he would ſay, to go a ſtep further.

It was obſervable, that though my father, in conſequence of this opinion, had, as I have told you, the ſtrongeſt likings and diſlikings towards certain names; — that there were ſtill numbers of names which hung ſo equally in the balance before him, that they were abſolutely indifferent to him. *Jack*, *Dick* and *Tom* were of this claſs: Theſe my father called neutral names; — affirming of them, without a ſatire, That there had been as many knaves and fools, at leaſt, as wiſe and good men, ſince the world began, who had indifferently borne them; — ſo that, like equal forces acting againſt each other in contrary directions, he thought they mutually deſtroyed each other's

other's effects; for which reaſon, he would often declare, He would not give a cherry-ſtone to chooſe amongſt them. *Bob*, which was my brother's name, was another of theſe neutral kinds of Chriſtian names, which operated very little either way; and as my father happened to be at *Epſom*, when it was given him, he would oft times thank heaven it was no worſe. *Andrew* was ſomething like a negative quantity in Algebra with him;—'twas worſe, he ſaid, than nothing.—*William* ſtood pretty high:—*Numps* again was low with him—and *Nick* he ſaid, was the DEVIL.

But, of all the names in the univerſe, he had the moſt unconquerable averſion for TRISTRAM;—he had the loweſt and moſt contemptible opinion of it of any thing in the world, thinking it could poſſibly produce nothing *in rerum natura*, but what was extremely mean and pitiful: So that in the midſt of a diſpute on the ſubject, in which, by the bye, he was frequently involved,—he would ſometimes break off in a ſudden and ſpirited EPIPHONEMA, or rather EROTESIS, raiſed a third, and ſometimes a full fifth, above the key of the diſcourſe,—and demand it categorically of his antagoniſt, Whether he would take upon him to ſay, he had ever remembered,—whether he had ever read,—or even whether he had ever heard tell of a man, call'd *Triſtram*, performing any thing great or worth recording?—No—, he would ſay,—TRISTRAM!—The thing is impoſſible.

What could be wanting in my father but to have wrote a book to publiſh this notion of his to the world? Little boots it to the ſubtle ſpeculatiſt to ſtand ſingle in his opinions,——unleſs

leſs he gives them proper vent:—It was the identical thing which my father did;—for in the year ſixteen, which was two years before I was born, he was at the pains of writing an expreſs DISSERTATION ſimply upon the word *Triſtram*,—ſhewing the world, with great candour and modeſty, the grounds of his great abhorrence to the name.

When this ſtory is compared with the title-page,—— Will not the gentle reader pity my father from his ſoul?—to ſee an orderly and well-diſpoſed gentleman, who tho' ſingular,—yet inoffenſive in his notions,—ſo played upon in them by croſs purpoſes;——to look down upon the ſtage, and ſee him baffled and overthrown in all his little ſyſtems and wiſhes; to behold a train of events perpetually falling out againſt him, and in ſo critical and cruel a way, as if they had purpoſedly been planned and pointed out againſt him, merely to inſult his ſpeculations.——In a word, to behold ſuch a one, in his old age, ill-fitted for troubles, ten times in a day ſuffering ſorrow;—ten times in a day calling the child of his prayers TRISTRAM!—Melancholy diſſyllable of ſound! which, to his ears, was uniſon to *Nicompoop*, and every name vituperative under heaven.——By his aſhes! I ſwear it,—if ever malignant ſpirit took pleaſure, or buſied itſelf in traverſing the purpoſes of mortal man,—it muſt have been here;—and if it was not neceſſary I ſhould be born before I was chriſtened, I would this moment give the reader an account of it.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

——How could you, Madam, be ſo inattentive in reading the laſt chapter? I told you in it, *That my mother was not a papiſt.*—Papiſt! You told me no ſuch thing, Sir. Madam, I beg leave to repeat it over again, That I told you as plain, at leaſt, as words, by direct inference, could tell you ſuch a thing.—Then, Sir, I muſt have miſſed a page.—No, Madam,—you have not miſſed a word.—Then, I was aſleep, Sir.—My pride, Madam, cannot allow you that refuge.—Then, I declare, I know nothing at all about the matter.—That, Madam, is the very fault I lay to your charge; and as a puniſhment for it, I do inſiſt upon it, that you immediately turn back, that is, as ſoon as you get to the next full ſtop, and read the whole chapter over again.

I have impoſed this pennance upon the lady, neither out of wantonneſs or cruelty, but from the beſt of motives; and therefore ſhall make her no apology for it when ſhe returns back:—'Tis to rebuke a vicious taſte which has crept into thouſands beſides herſelf,—of reading ſtraight forwards, more in queſt of the adventures, than of the deep erudition and knowledge which a book of this caſt, if read over as it ſhould be, would infallibly impart with them.——The mind ſhould be accuſtomed to make wiſe reflections, and draw curious concluſions as it goes along; the habitude of which made *Pliny* the younger affirm, "That he never read a book ſo bad, but he drew ſome profit

fit from it." The ſtories of *Greece* and *Rome*, run over without this turn and application, — do leſs ſervice, I affirm it, than the hiſtory of *Pariſmus* and *Pariſmenus*, or of the Seven Champions of *England*, read with it.

——— But here comes my fair Lady. Have you read over again the chapter, Madam, as I deſired you? — You have: And did you not obſerve the paſſage, upon the ſecond reading, which admits the inference? — Not a word like it? Then, Madam, be pleaſed to ponder well the laſt line but one of the chapter, where I take upon me to ſay, "It was *neceſſary* I ſhould be born before I was chriſtened." Had my mother, Madam, been a Papiſt, that conſequence did not follow *.

It

* The *Romiſh* Rituals direct the baptizing of the child, in caſes of danger, *before* it is born; —— but upon this proviſo, That ſome part or other of the child's body be ſeen by the baptizer: —— But the Doctors of the *Sorbonne*, by a deliberation held amongſt them, *April* 10, 1733, — have enlarged the powers of the midwives, by determining, That tho' no part of the child's body ſhould appear, —— that baptiſm ſhall, nevertheleſs, be adminiſtered to it by injection, —— *par le moyen d' une petite Canulle.* — Anglice, *a ſquirt.* —— 'Tis very ſtrange, that St. *Thomas Aquinas*, who had ſo good a mechanical head, both for tying and untying the knots of ſchool divinity, — ſhould, after ſo much pains beſtowed upon this, — give up the point at laſt, as a ſecond *La choſe impoſſible*; —— "Infantes in maternis uteris exiſtentes (quoth St. *Thomas*) baptizari poſſunt *nullo modo*." —— *O Thomas! Thomas!*

If

It is a terrible misfortune for this ſame book of mine, but more ſo to the Republic of Letters, — ſo that my own is quite ſwallowed up in the conſideration of it, — that this ſelf-ſame vile pruriency for freſh adventures in all things, has got ſo ſtrongly into our habit and humours, — and ſo wholly intent are we upon ſatisfying the impatience of our concupiſcence that way, that nothing but the groſs and more carnal parts of a compoſition will go down: — The ſubtle hints and ſly communication of ſcience fly off, like ſpirits, upwards; — the heavy moral eſcapes downwards; and both the one and the other are as much loſt to the world, as if they were ſtill left in the bottom of the ink-horn.

I wiſh the male reader has not paſſed by many a one, as quaint and curious as this one, in which the female-reader has been detected. I wiſh it may have its effects; — and that all good people, both male and female, from her example, may be taught to think as well as read.

If the reader has the curioſity to ſee the queſtion upon baptiſm, *by injection*, as preſented to the Doctors of the *Sorbonne*, —— with their conſultation thereupon, it is as follows.

MEMOIRE

MEMOIRE preſenté a Meſſieurs les Docteurs de SORBONNE.

UN Chirurgien Accoucheur, repreſente à Meſſieurs les Docteurs de *Sorbonne*, qu'il y a de cas, quoique trés rares, où une mere ne ſçauroit accoucher, & même où l' enfant eſt tellement renfermé dans le ſein de ſa mere, qu'il ne fait parôitre aucune partie de ſon corps, ce qui ſeroit un cas, ſuivant les Rituels, de lui conférer, du moins ſous condition, le baptême. Le Chirurgien, qui conſulte, prétend par le moyen d' une *petite canulle*, de pouvoir baptiſer immediatement l' enfant, ſans faire aucun tort à la mere —— Il demand ſi ce moyen, qu' il vient de propoſer, eſt permis & légitime, et s' il peut s' en ſervir dans le cas qu' il vient d' expoſer.

REPONSE.

LE conſeil eſtime, que la queſtion propoſée ſouffre de grandes difficultes. Les Théologiens poſent d' un coté pour principe, que le baptême, qui eſt une naiſſance ſpirituelle, ſuppoſe une premiere naiſſance; il faut être né dans le monde, pour renâitre en *Jeſus Chriſt* comme ils l' enſeignent. S. *Thomas*, 3 *part. quæſt.* 88. *artic.* 11. ſuit cette doctrine comme une verité conſtante; l' on ne peut, dit ce, S Docteur, baptiſer les enfans qui ſont renfermés dans le ſein de leurs Meres, et S. *Thomas* eſt fondé ſur ce, que les enfans ne ſont point nés, & ne peuvent être comptés parmi les autres hommes; d' ou il conclud,

conclud, qu'ils ne peuvent être l' object d' une action extérieure, pour recevoir par leur miniſtére les ſacremens néceſſaires au ſalut : *Pueri in maternis uteris exiſtentes nondum prodierunt in lucem ut cum aliis hominibus vitam ducant, unde non poſſunt ſubjici actioni humanæ, ut per eorum miniſterium ſacramenta recipiant ad ſalutem.* Les rituels ordonnent dans la pratique ce que les theologiens ont établi ſur les mêmes matiéres, & ils deféndent tous d' une maniére uniforme de baptiſer les enfans qui ſont renfermés dans le ſein de leurs meres, s' ils ne font paroitre quelque partie de leurs corps. Le concours des théologiens, & des rituels, qui ſont les régles des diocéſes, paroît former une autorité qui termine la queſtion preſente ; cependant le conſeil de conſcience conſiderant d' un côté, que le raiſonnement des théologiens eſt uniquement fondé ſur une raiſon de convenance, & que la defenſe des rituels, ſuppoſe que l' on ne peut baptiſer immediatement les enfans ainſi renfermés dans le ſein de leurs meres, ce qui eſt contre la ſuppoſition preſente ; & d' un autre côté, conſiderant que les mêmes théologiens enſeignent, que l' on peut riſquer les ſacremens que *Jeſus Chriſt* a établis comme des moyens faciles, mais néceſſaires pour ſanctifier les hommes ; & d' ailleurs eſtimant, que les enfans renfermés dans le ſein de leur meres, pourroient être capables de ſalut parce qu' ils ſont capables de damnation ; —— pour ces conſiderations, & eu égard a l' expoſé, ſuivant lequel on aſſure avoir trouvé un moyen certain de baptiſer ces enfans ainſi renfermés, ſans faire aucun tort a la mere, le Conſeil eſtime que l' on pourroit ſe ſervir du moyen propoſe, dans la confiance qu'

il a, que Dieu n' a point laiſſé ces ſortes d' enfans ſans aucuns ſecours, & ſuppoſant, comme il eſt expoſé, que le moyen dont il s' agit eſt propre a leur procurer le baptême; cependant comme il s' agiroit, en autoriſant la pratique propoſée, de changer une régle univerſellement établie, le Conſeil croit que celui qui conſulte doit s' adreſſer a ſon évêque, & a qui il appartient de juger de l' utilité, & du danger du moyen propoſé, & comme, ſous le bon plaiſir de l' évêque, le conſeil eſtime qu'il faut droit recourir au Pape, qui a le droit d' expliquer les régles de l' egliſe, et d'y déroger dans le cas, ou la loi ne ſçauroit obliger, quelque ſage & quelque utile que paroiſſe la maniére de baptiſer dont il s' agit, le conſeil ne pourroit, l' approuver ſans le concours de ces deux autorités. On conſeile au moins a celui qui conſulte, de s' adreſſer à ſon evêque, & de lui faire part de la preſente déciſion, afin que, ſi le prélat, entre dans les raiſons ſur leſquelles les docteurs ſouſſignés s' appuyent, il puiſſe être autoriſé dans le cas de néceſſité, ou il riſqueroit trop d' attendre que la permiſſion fût demandée & accordée d' employer le moyen qu' il propoſe ſi avantageux au ſalut de l' enfant. Au reſte le conſeile, en eſtimant que l' on pourroit s' en ſervir croit cependant, que ſi les enfans dont il s' agit, venoient au monde, contre l' eſperance, de ceux qui ſe ſéroient ſervis du même moyen, il ſéroit néceſſaire de les baptiſer *ſous condition*, & en cela le conſeil ſe conforme à tous les rituels, qui en autoriſant le baptême d' un enfant qui fait paroître quelque partie de ſon corps, enjoignent néanmoins & ordonnent de le baptiſer *ſous condition*,

dition, s' il vient heureuſement au monde. Déliberé en *Sorbonne*, le 10 *Avril*, 1733.

A. LE MOYNE,
L. DE ROMIGNY,
DE MARCILLY.

Mr. *Triſtram Shandy*'s compliments to Meſſrs. *Le Moyne*, *De Romigny* and *De Marcilly*, hopes they all reſted well the night after ſo tireſome a conſultation. — He begs to know, whether, after the ceremony of marriage, and before that of conſummation, the baptizing all the HOMUNCULI at once, ſlap daſh, by *injection*, would not be a ſhorter and ſafer cut ſtill; on condition, as above. That if the HOMUNCULI do well and come ſafe into the world after this, That each and every of them ſhall be baptized again *(ſous condition.)* — And provided, in the ſecond place, That the thing can be done, which Mr. *Shandy* apprehends it may, *par le moyen d' une* petite canule, and, *ſans faire aucun tort à la mere.*

CHAP. XXI.

——— I wonder what's all that noiſe, and running backwards and forwards for, above ſtairs, quoth my father, addreſſing himſelf, after an hour and a half's ſilence, to my uncle *Toby*, — who, you muſt know, was ſitting on the oppoſite ſide of the fire, ſmoaking his ſocial pipe all the time in mute contemplation of a new pair of black-pluſh-breeches which he had got on; — What can they be doing brother? quoth my father, — we can ſcarce hear ourſelves talk.

I think, replied my uncle *Toby*, taking his pipe from his mouth, and ſtriking the head of it two or three times upon the nail of his left

thumb, as he began his ſentence,—I think, ſays he:—But to enter rightly into my uncle *Toby*'s ſentiments upon this matter, you muſt be made to enter firſt a little into his character, the out-lines of which I ſhall juſt give you, and then the dialogues between him and my father, will go on as well again.

——Pray what was that man's name,—for I write in ſuch a hurry, I have no time to recollect or look for it,—who firſt made the obſervation, "That there was great inconſtancy in our air and climate?" Whoever he was, 'twas a juſt and good obſervation in him.——But the corollary drawn from it, namely, "That it is this which has furniſhed us with ſuch a variety of odd and whimſical characters;"—— that was not his;—it was found out by another man, at leaſt a century and a half after him:—Then again,—that this copious ſtorehouſe of original materials, is the true and natural cauſe that our comedies are ſo much better than thoſe of *France*, or any other that either have, or can be wrote upon the continent,—that diſcovery was not fully made till about the middle of king *William*'s reign,—when the great *Dryden* in writing one of his long prefaces, (if I miſtake not) moſt fortunately hit upon it. Indeed towards the latter end of queen *Anne*, the great *Addiſon* began to patronize the notion, and more fully explained it to the world in one or two of his Spectators;—but the diſcovery was not his.——Then, fourthly and laſtly, that this ſtrange irregularity in our climate, producing ſo ſtrange an irregularity in our characters,—doth thereby, in ſome ſort, make us amends, by giving us ſomewhat to make us merry with when

when the weather will not ſuffer us to go out of doors, — that obſervation is my own — and was ſtruck out by me this very rainy day, *March* 26, 1759, and betwixt the hours of nine and ten in the morning.

Thus, — thus my fellow labourers and aſſociates in this great harveſt of our learning now ripening before our eyes; thus it is, by ſlow ſteps of caſual increaſe, that our knowledge, phyſical, metaphyſical, phyſiological, polemical, nautical, mathematical, ænigmatical, technical, biographical, romantical, chemical, and obſtetrical, with fifty other branches of it, (moſt of 'em ending, as theſe do, in *ical*) have for theſe two laſt centuries and more, gradually been creeping upwards towards that Ακμη of their perfections, from which, if we may form a conjecture from the advances of theſe laſt ſeven years, we cannot poſſibly be far off.

When that happens, it is to be hoped, it will put an end to all kind of writings whatſoever; — the want of all kind of writings will put an end to all kind of reading; — and that in time, *As war begets poverty, poverty peace*, — muſt, in courſe, put an end to all kind of knowledge, — and then — we ſhall have all to begin over again; or, in other words, be exactly where we ſtarted.

—— Happy! thrice happy Times! I only wiſh that the æra of my begetting, as well as the mode and manner of it, had been a little altered, or that it could have been put off with any eaſe to my father or mother, for ſome twenty or five and twenty years longer, when a man in the literary world might have ſtood ſome chance. —

But I forget my uncle *Toby*, whom all this

while we have left knocking the aſhes out of his tobacco pipe.

His humour was of that particular ſpecies, which does honour to our atmoſphere; and I ſhould have made no ſcruple of ranking him amongſt one of the firſt-rate productions of it, had not there appeared too many ſtrong lines in it of a family-likeneſs, which ſhewed that he derived the ſingularity of his temper more from blood, than either wind or water, or any modification or combinations of them whatever: And I have, therefore, oft times wondered, that my father, tho' I believe he had his reaſons for it, upon his obſerving ſome tokens of excentricity in my courſe when I was a boy, — ſhould never once endeavour to account for them in this way; for all the SHANDY FAMILY were of an original character throughout; — I mean the males, — the females had no character at all, — except, indeed, my great aunt DINAH, who, about ſixty years ago, was married and got with child by the coachman, for which my father, according to his hypotheſis of Chriſtian names, would often ſay, She might thank her godfathers and godmothers.

It will ſeem very ſtrange, — and I would as ſoon think of dropping a riddle in the reader's way, which is not my intereſt to do, as ſet him upon gueſſing how it could come to paſs, that an event of this kind, ſo many years after it had happened, ſhould be reſerved for the interruption of the peace and unity, which otherwiſe ſo cordially ſubſiſted, between my father and my uncle *Toby*. One would have thought, that the whole force of the misfortune ſhould have ſpent and waſted itſelf in the family at firſt, — as is generally

nerally the caſe: —— But nothing ever wrought with our family after the ordinary way. Poſſibly at the very time this happened, it might have ſomething elſe to afflict it; and as afflictions are ſent down for our good, and that as this had never done the SHANDY FAMILY any good at all, it might lye waiting till apt times and circumſtances ſhould give it an opportunity to diſcharge its office. —— Obſerve, I determine nothing upon this. —— My way is ever to point out to the curious, different tracts of inveſtigation, to come at the firſt ſprings of the events I tell;— not with a pedantic *Feſcue*, — or in the deciſive manner of *Tacitus*, who outwits himſelf and his reader;— but with the officious humility of a heart devoted to the aſſiſtance merely of the inquiſitive;— to them I write,— and by them I ſhall be read,— if any ſuch reading as this could be ſuppoſed to hold out ſo long, to the very end of the world.

Why this cauſe of ſorrow, therefore, was thus reſerved for my father and uncle, is undetermined by me. But how and in what direction it exerted itſelf, ſo as to become the cauſe of diſſatisfaction between them, after it began to operate, is what I am able to explain with great exactneſs, and is as follows:

My uncle TOBY SHANDY, Madam, was a gentleman, who with the virtues which uſually conſtitute the character of a man of honour and rectitude, poſſeſſed one in a very eminent degree, which is ſeldom or never put into the catalogue; and that was a moſt extream and unparalleled modeſty of nature; —— tho' I correct the word nature, for this reaſon, that I may not prejudge a point which muſt ſhortly come to a hearing; and that is, whether this modeſty of

his was natural or acquired.—— Which ever way my uncle *Toby* came by it, 'twas nevertheleſs modeſty in the trueſt ſenſe of it; and that is, Madam, not in regard to words, for he was ſo unhappy as to have very little choice in them,— but to things;—— and this kind of modeſty ſo poſſeſſed him, and it aroſe to ſuch a height in him, as almoſt to equal, if ſuch a thing could be, even the modeſty of a woman: That female nicety, Madam, and inward cleanlineſs of mind and fancy, in your ſex, which makes you ſo much the awe of ours.

You will imagine, Madam, that my uncle *Toby* had contracted all this from this very ſource;— that he had ſpent a great part of his time in converſe with your ſex; and that from a thorough knowledge of you, and the force of imitation which ſuch fair examples render irreſiſtible,—— he had acquired this amiable turn of mind.

I wiſh I could ſay ſo,— for unleſs it was with his ſiſter-in-law, my father's wife and my mother,— my uncle *Toby* ſcarce exchanged three words with the ſex in as many years;— no, he got it, Madam, by a blow.— A blow!— Yes, Madam, it was owing to a blow from a ſtone, broke off by a ball from the parapet of a horn-work at the ſiege of *Namur*, which ſtruck full upon my uncle *Toby*'s groin.— Which way could that affect it? The ſtory of that, Madam, is long and intereſting;— but it would be running my hiſtory all upon heaps to give it to you here.— 'Tis for an epiſode hereafter; and every circumſtance relating to it in its proper place, ſhall be faithfully laid before you:— 'Till then, it is not in my power to give further light into

into this matter, or ſay more than what I have ſaid already, — That my uncle *Toby* was a gentleman of unparalleled modeſty, which happening to be ſomewhat ſubtilized and rarified by the conſtant heat of a little family pride, — they both ſo wrought together within him, that he could never bear to hear the affair of my aunt DINAH touched upon, but with the greateſt emotion. — The leaſt hint of it was enough to make the blood fly into his face; — but when my father enlarged upon the ſtory in mixed companies, which the illuſtration of his hypotheſis frequently obliged him to do, — the unfortunate blight of one of the faireſt branches of the family, would ſet my uncle *Toby*'s honour and modeſty a bleeding, and he would often take my father aſide, in the greateſt concern imaginable, to expoſtulate and tell him, he would give him any thing in the world only to let the ſtory reſt.

My father, I believe, had the trueſt love and tenderneſs for my uncle *Toby*, that ever one brother bore towards another, and would have done any thing in nature, which one brother in reaſon could have deſired of another, to have made my uncle *Toby*'s heart eaſy in this or any other point. But this lay out of his power.

— My father, as I told you, was a philoſopher in grain, — ſpeculative, — ſyſtematical — and my aunt *Dinah*'s affair was a matter of as much conſequence to him, as the retrogradation of the planets to *Copernicus*; — The backſlidings of *Venus* in her orbit fortified the *Copernican* ſyſtem, called ſo after his name; and the backſlidings of my aunt *Dinah* in her orbit, did the ſame ſervice in eſtabliſhing my father's ſyſtem,

which, I truſt, will for ever hereafter be called the *Shandean Syſtem*, after his.

In any other family diſhonour, my father, I believe, had as nice a ſenſe of ſhame as any man whatever; — and neither he, nor, I dare ſay, *Copernicus*, would have divulged the affair in either caſe, or have taken the leaſt notice of it to the world, but for the obligations they owed, as they thought, to truth. — *Amicus Plato*, my father would ſay, conſtruing the words to my uncle *Toby*, as he went along, *Amicus Plato*; that is, DINAH was my aunt; — *ſed magis amica veritas* — but TRUTH is my ſiſter.

This contrariety of humours betwixt my father and my uncle, was the ſource of many a fraternal ſquabble. The one could not bear to hear the tale of family diſgrace recorded, — and the other would ſcarce ever let a day paſs to an end without ſome hint of it.

For God's ſake, my uncle *Toby* would cry, — and for my ſake, and for all our ſakes, my dear brother *Shandy*, — do let this ſtory of our aunt's and her aſhes ſleep in peace; — how can you, — how can you have ſo little feeling and compaſſion for the character of our family? — What is the character of a family to an hypotheſis? my father would reply. —— Nay, if you come to that — what is the life of a family? —— The life of a family! — My uncle *Toby* would ſay, throwing himſelf back in his arm-chair and lifting up his hands, his eyes, and one leg. —— Yes the life, — my father would ſay, maintaining his point. How many thouſands of them are there every year that comes, caſt away (in all civilized countries at leaſt) — and conſidered as nothing but common air, in competition of an hypotheſis.

hypotheſis. In my plain ſenſe of things, my uncle *Toby*, would anſwer, — every ſuch inſtance is downright MURDER, let who will commit it. — There lies your miſtake, my father would reply; — for, in *Foro Scientiæ* there is no ſuch thing as MURDER, — 'tis only DEATH, brother.

My uncle *Toby* would never offer to anſwer this by any other kind of argument, than that of whiſtling half a dozen bars of *Lillabullero*. —— You muſt know it was the uſual channel through which his paſſions got vent, when any thing ſhocked or ſurprized him; — but eſpecially when any thing, which he deemed very abſurd, was offer'd.

As not one of our logical writers, nor any of the commentators upon them, that I remember, have thought proper to give a name to this particular ſpecies of argument, — I here take the liberty to do it myſelf for two reaſons. Firſt, That, in order to prevent all confuſion in diſputes, it may ſtand as much diſtinguiſhed for ever, from every other ſpecies of argument, — as the *Argumentum ad Verecundiam*, *ex Abſurdo*, *ex Fortiori*, or any other argument whatſoever: — And, ſecondly, That it may be ſaid by my children's children, when my head is laid to reſt, — that their learned grand-father's head had been buſied to as much purpoſe once, as other people's: — That he had invented a name, — and generouſly thrown it into the TREASURY of the *Ars Logica*, for one of the moſt unanſwerable arguments in the whole ſcience. And if the end of diſputation is more to ſilence than convince, — they may add, if they pleaſe, to one of the beſt arguments too.

I do

I do therefore by theſe preſents, ſtrictly order and command, That it be known and diſtinguiſhed by the name and title of the *Argumentum Fiſtulatorium*, and no other; — and that it rank hereafter with the *Argumentum Baculinum*, and the *Argumentum ad Crumenam*, and for ever hereafter be treated of in the ſame chapter.

As for the *Argumentum Tripodium*, which is never uſed but by the woman againſt the man; — and the *Argumentum ad Rem*, which, contrary wiſe, is made uſe of by the man only againſt the woman: — As theſe two are enough in conſcience for one lecture; — and, moreover, as the one is the beſt anſwer to the other, — let them likewiſe be kept apart, and be treated of in a place by themſelves.

CHAP. XXII.

THE learned Biſhop *Hall*, I mean the famous Dr. *Joſeph Hall*, who was Biſhop of *Exeter* in King *James* the firſt's reign, tells us in one of his *Decades*, at the end of his divine art of meditation, imprinted at *London*, in the year 1610, by *John Beal*, dwelling in *Alderſgate-ſtreet*, "That it is an abominable thing for a man to commend himſelf;" — and I really think it is ſo.

And yet, on the other hand, when a thing is executed in a maſterly kind of a faſhion, which thing is not likely to be found out; — I think it is full as abominable, that a man ſhould loſe the honour of it, and go out of the world with the conceit of it rotting in his head.

This is preciſely my ſituation.

For

For in this long digreſſion which I was accidentally led into, as in all my digreſſions (one only excepted) there is a maſter-ſtroke of digreſſive ſkill, the merit of which has all along, I fear, been overlooked by my reader, — not for want of penetration in him, — but becauſe 'tis an excellence ſeldom looked for, or expected indeed, in a digreſſion; — and it is this: That tho' my digreſſions are all fair, as you obſerve, — and that I fly off from what I am about, as far and as often too as any writer in *Great-Britain*; yet I conſtantly take care to order affairs ſo, that my main buſineſs does not ſtand ſtill in my abſence.

I was juſt going, for example, to have given you the great out-lines of my uncle *Toby*'s moſt whimſical character; — when my aunt *Dinah* and the Coachman came acroſs us, and led us a vagary ſome millions of miles into the very heart of the planetary ſyſtem: Notwithſtanding all this you perceive that the drawing of my uncle *Toby*'s character went on gently all the time; — not the great contours of it, — that was impoſſible, — but ſome familiar ſtrokes and faint deſignations of it, were here and there touch'd in, as we went along, ſo that you are much better acquainted with my uncle *Toby* now than you was before.

By this contrivance the machinery of my work is of a ſpecies by itſelf; two contrary motions are introduced into it, and reconciled, which were thought to be at variance with each other. In a word, my work is digreſſive, and it is progreſſive too, — and at the ſame time.

This, Sir, is a very different ſtory from that of the earth's moving round her axis, in her diurnal rotation, with her progreſs in her elliptic orbit

orbit which brings about the year, and conſtitutes that variety and viciſſitude of ſeaſons we enjoy; — though I own it ſuggeſted the thought, —— as I believe the greateſt of our boaſted improvements and diſcoveries have come from ſome ſuch trifling hints.

Digreſſions, inconteſtably, are the ſunſhine; —— they are the life, the ſoul of reading; — take them out of this book for inſtance, — you might as well take the book along with them; — one cold eternal winter would reign in every page of it; reſtore them to the writer; — he ſteps forth like a bridegroom, — bids All hail; brings in variety, and forbids the appetite to fail.

All the dexterity is in the good cookery and management of them, ſo as to be not only for the advantage of the reader, but alſo of the author, whoſe diſtreſs, in this matter, is truly pitiable: For if he begins a digreſſion, — from that moment, I obſerve, his whole work ſtands ſtock-ſtill; — and if he goes on with his main work, — then there is an end of his digreſſion.

—— This is vile work. —— For which reaſon, from the beginning of this, you ſee, I have conſtructed the main work and the adventitious parts of it with ſuch interſections, and have ſo complicated and involved the digreſſive and progreſſive movements, one wheel within another, that the whole machine, in general, has been kept agoing; — and, what's more, it ſhall be kept agoing theſe forty years, if it pleaſes the fountain of health to bleſs me ſo long with life and good ſpirits.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

I Have a ſtrong propenſity in me to begin this chapter very nonſenſically, and I will not balk my fancy.——— Accordingly I ſet off thus.

If the fixure of *Momus*'s glaſs, in the human breaſt, according to the propoſed emendation of that arch-critic, had taken place,—— firſt, This fooliſh conſequence would certainly have followed,—— That the very wiſeſt and the very graveſt of us all, in one coin or other, muſt have paid window-money every day of our lives.

And, ſecondly, That had the ſaid glaſs been there ſet up, nothing more would have been wanting, in order to have taken a man's character, but to have taken a chair and gone ſoftly, as you would to a dioptrical bee-hive, and looked in,— view'd the ſoul ſtark naked;—obſerved all her motions,— her machinations;—— traced all her maggots from their firſt engendering to their crawling forth;—watched her looſe in her friſks, her gambols, her capricios; and after ſome notice of her more ſolemn deportment, conſequent upon ſuch friſks, &c.—— then taken your pen and ink and ſet down nothing but what you had ſeen, and could have ſworn to:—— But this is an advantage not to be had by the biographer in this planet,— in the planet *Mercury* (belike) it may be ſo, if not, better ſtill for him;— for there the intenſe heat of the country, which is proved by computators, from its vicinity to the ſun, to be more than equal to that of red hot iron,— muſt, I think, long ago have vitrified the bodies of the inhabitants,

tants, (as the efficient cauſe) to ſuit them for the climate (which is the final cauſe); ſo that, betwixt them both, all the tenements of their ſouls, from top to bottom, may be nothing elſe, for ought the ſoundeſt philoſophy can ſhew to the contrary, but one fine tranſparent body of clear glaſs (bating the umbilical knot); — ſo, that till the inhabitants grow old and tolerably wrinkled, whereby the rays of light, in paſſing thro' them, become ſo monſtrouſly refracted, — or return reflected from their ſurfaces in ſuch tranſverſe lines to the eye, that a man cannot be ſeen thro'; — his ſoul might as well, unleſs, for more ceremony, — or the trifling advantage which the umbilical point gave her, — might, upon all other accounts, I ſay, as well play the fool out o' doors as in her own houſe.

But this, as I ſaid above, is not the caſe of the inhabitants of this earth; — our minds ſhine not through the body, but are warpt up here in a dark covering of uncryſtallized fleſh and blood; ſo that if we would come to the ſpecific characters of them, we muſt go ſome other way to work.

Many, in good truth, are the ways which human wit has been forced to take to do this thing with exactneſs.

Some, for inſtance, draw all their characters with wind inſtruments. —— *Virgil* takes notice of that way in the affair of *Dido* and *Æneas*; — but it is as fallacious as the breath of fame; — and, moreover, beſpeaks a narrow genius. I am not ignorant that the *Italians* pretend to a mathematical exactneſs in their deſignations of one particular ſort of character among them, from the *forte* or *piano* of a certain wind inſtrument they

they uſe, —— which they ſay is infallible. —— I dare not mention the name of the inſtrument in this place; ——'tis ſufficient we have it amongſt us, — but never think of making a drawing by it; —this is ænigmatical, and intended to be ſo, at leaſt, *ad populum:* — And therefore I beg, Madam, when you come here, that you read on as faſt as you can, and never ſtop to make any inquiry about it.

There are others again, who will draw a man's character from no other helps in the world, but merely from his evacuations; —— but this often gives a very incorrect out-line, —— unleſs, indeed, you take a ſketch of his repletions too; and by correcting one drawing from the other, compound one good figure out of them both.

I ſhould have no objection to this method, but that I think it muſt ſmell too ſtrong of the lamp, — and be rendered ſtill more operoſe, by forcing you to have an eye to the reſt of his *Non-Naturals.* ——— Why the moſt natural actions of a man's life ſhould be called his Non-Naturals, — is another queſtion.

There are others, fourthly, who diſdain every one of theſe expedients; — not from any fertility of their own, but from the various ways of doing it, which they have borrowed from the honourable devices which the Pentagraphic Brethren * of the bruſh have ſhewn in taking copies.—Theſe, you muſt know, are your great hiſtorians.

One of theſe you will ſee drawing a full-length character *againſt the light*; ——— that's illiberal,

* Pentagraph, an inſtrument to copy prints and pictures mechanically, and in any proportion.

illiberal, — diſhoneſt, — and hard upon the character of the man who ſits.

Others, to mend the matter, will make a drawing of you in the *Camera*; — that is moſt unfair of all, — becauſe, *there* you are ſure to be repreſented in ſome of your moſt ridiculous attitudes.

To avoid all and every one of theſe errors, in giving you my uncle *Toby*'s character, I am determined to draw it by no mechanical help whatever; — nor ſhall my pencil be guided by any one wind inſtrument which ever was blown upon, either on this, or on the other ſide of the *Alps*; — nor will I conſider either his repletions or his diſcharges, — or touch upon his Non-Naturals; — but, IN a word, I will draw my uncle *Toby*'s character from his HOBBY-HORSE.

CHAP. XXIV.

IF I was not morally ſure that the reader muſt be out of all patience for my uncle *Toby*'s character, —— I would here previouſly have convinced him, that there is no inſtrument ſo fit to draw ſuch a thing with, as that which I have pitched upon.

A man and his HOBBY-HORSE, tho' I cannot ſay that they act and re-act exactly after the ſame manner in which the ſoul and body do upon each other: Yet doubtleſs there is a communication between them of ſome kind, and my opinion rather is, that there is ſomething in it more of the manner of electrified bodies, — and that by means of the heated parts of the rider, which come immediately into contact with the back of the

the HOBBY-HORSE. —— By long journies and much friction, it ſo happens that the body of the rider is at length fill'd as full of HOBBY-HORSICAL matter as it can hold; — ſo that if you are able to give but a clear deſcription of the nature of the one, you may form a pretty exact notion of the genius and character of the other.

Now the HOBBY-HORSE which my uncle *Toby* always rode upon, was in my opinion, an HOBBY-HORSE well worth giving a deſcription of, if it was only upon the ſcore of his great ſingularity; for you might have travelled from *York to Dover*, — from *Dover* to *Penzance* in *Cornwall*, and from *Penzance* to *York* back again, and not have ſeen ſuch another upon the road; or if you had ſeen ſuch a one, whatever haſte you had been in, you muſt infallibly have ſtopped to have taken a view of him. Indeed, the gait and figure of him was ſo ſtrange, and ſo utterly unlike was he, from his head to his tail, to any one of the whole ſpecies, that it was now and then made a matter of diſpute, —— whether he was really a HOBBY-HORSE or no: But as the Philoſopher would uſe no other argument to the ſceptic, who diſputed with him againſt the reality of motion, ſave that of riſing up upon his legs, and walking acroſs the room; — ſo would my uncle *Toby* uſe no other argument to prove his HOBBY-HORSE was a HOBBY-HORSE indeed, but by getting upon his back and riding him about; — leaving the world after that to determine the point as it thought fit.

In good truth, my uncle *Toby* mounted him with ſo much pleaſure, and he carried my uncle *Toby* ſo well, — that he troubled his head very little with what the world either ſaid or thought about it.

It is now high time, however, that I give you a deſcription of him: — But to go on regularly, I only beg you will give me leave to acquaint you firſt, how my uncle *Toby* came by him.

CHAP. XXV.

THE wound in my uncle *Toby*'s groin, which he received at the ſiege of *Namur*, rendering him unfit for the ſervice, it was thought expedient he ſhould return to *England*, in order, if poſſible, to be ſet to rights.

He was four years totally confined, — part of it to his bed, and all of it to his room; and in the courſe of his cure, which was all that time in hand, ſuffered unſpeakable miſeries, — owing to a ſucceſſion of exfoliations from the *os pubis*, and the outward edge of that part of the *coxendix* called the *os ilieum*, — both which bones were diſmally cruſh'd, as much by the irregularity of the ſtone, which I told you was broke off the parapet, — as by its ſize, — (though it was pretty large) which inclined the ſurgeon all along to think, that the great injury which it had done my uncle *Toby*'s groin, was more owing to the gravity of the ſtone itſelf, than to the projectile force of it; — which he would often tell him was a great happineſs.

My father at that time was juſt beginning buſineſs in *London*, and had taken a houſe; — and as the trueſt friendſhip and cordiality ſubſiſted between the two brothers, — and that my father thought my uncle *Toby* could no where be ſo well nurſed and taken care of as in his own houſe,

houſe, — he aſſigned him the very beſt apartment in it. —— And what was a much more ſincere mark of his affection ſtill, he would never ſuffer a friend or an acquaintance to ſtep into the houſe on any occaſion, but he would take him by the hand, and lead him up ſtairs to ſee his brother *Toby*, and chat an hour by his bed ſide.

The hiſtory of a ſoldier's wound beguiles the pain of it — my uncle's viſiters at leaſt thought ſo, and in their daily calls upon him from the courteſy ariſing out of that belief, they would frequently turn the diſcourſe to that ſubject, — and from that ſubject the diſcourſe would generally roll on to the ſiege itſelf.

Theſe converſations were infinitely kind; and my uncle *Toby* received great relief from them, and would have received much more, but that they brought him into ſome unforeſeen perplexities, which, for three months together, retarded his cure greatly; and if he had not hit upon an expedient to extricate himſelf out of them, I verily believe they would have laid him in his grave.

What theſe perplexities of my uncle *Toby* were, — 'tis impoſſible for you to gueſs: — if you could, — I ſhould bluſh; not as a relation, not as a man, — nor even as a woman, — but I ſhould bluſh as an author; inaſmuch as I ſet no ſmall ſtore by myſelf upon this very account, that my reader has never yet been able to gueſs at any thing. And in this, Sir, I am of ſo nice and ſingular a humour, that if I thought you was able to form the leaſt judgment or probable conjecture to yourſelf, of what was to come in the next page, — I would tear it out of my book.

END of the FIRST VOLUME.

THE

LIFE

AND

OPINIONS

OF

TRISTRAM SHANDY,

GENTLEMAN.

Ταρασσει τὺς Ἀνθρώπυς ὲ τὰ Πράγμαλα, αλλα τὰ πὲρι τῶν Πραγμαλων, Δογμαλα.

VOL. II.

THE

LIFE

AND

OPINIONS

OF

TRISTRAM SHANDY,

GENTLEMAN.

Τερψεται τις ἀσχολων ἐτερα θεωμενος, καια
μη τα ἑαυτου πραττων. Aristoph.

VOL. II.

THE LIFE and OPINIONS OF TRISTRAM SHANDY, Gt.

CHAP. I.

I Have begun a new book, on purpoſe that I might have room enough to explain the nature of the perplexities in which my uncle *Toby* was involved, from the many diſcourſes and interrogations about the ſiege of *Namur*, where he received his wound.

I muſt remind the reader, in caſe he has read the hiſtory of King *William*'s wars, — but if he has not, — I then inform him, that one of the moſt memorable attacks in that ſiege, was that which was made by the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* upon the point of the advanced counterſcarp, be-

fore the gate of *St. Nicolas*, which incloſed the great ſluice or water-ſtop, where the *Engliſh* were terribly expoſed to the ſhot of the counter-guard and demi-baſtion of *St. Roch:* The iſſue of which hot diſpute, in three words, was this; That the *Dutch* lodged themſelves upon the counter-guard, — and that the *Engliſh* made themſelves maſters of the covered way before *St. Nicolas*'s gate, notwithſtanding the gallantry of the *French* officers, who expoſed themſelves upon the glacis ſword in hand.

As this was the principal attack of which my uncle *Toby* was an eye-witneſs at *Namur*, —— the army of the beſiegers being cut off, by the confluence of the *Maes* and *Sambre*, from ſeeing much of each other's operations, — my uncle *Toby* was generally more eloquent and particular in his account of it; and the many perplexities he was in, aroſe out of the almoſt inſurmountable difficulties he found in telling his ſtory intelligibly, and giving ſuch clear ideas of the differences and diſtinctions between the ſcarp and counterſcarp, — the glacis and covered way, — the half-moon and ravelin, as to make his company fully comprehend where and what he was about.

Writers themſelves are too apt to confound theſe terms; — ſo that you will the leſs wonder, if in his endeavours to explain them, and in oppoſition to many miſconceptions, that my uncle *Toby* did oft-times puzzle his viſiters; and ſometimes himſelf too.

To ſpeak the truth, unleſs the company my father led up ſtairs were tolerably clear-headed, or my uncle *Toby* was in one of his beſt explanatory moods, 'twas a difficult thing, do what

he

he could, to keep the diſcourſe free from obſcurity.

What rendered the account of this affair the more intricate to my uncle *Toby*, was this,— that in the attack of the counterſcarp before the gate of *St. Nicolas*, extending itſelf from the bank of the *Maes*, quite up to the great water-ſtop; — the ground was cut and croſs-cut with ſuch a multitude of dykes, drains, rivulets, and ſluices, on all ſides, — and he would get ſo ſadly bewildered and ſet faſt amongſt them, that frequently he could neither get backwards or forwards to ſave his life; and was oft times obliged to give up the attack upon that very account only.

Theſe perplexing rebuffs gave my uncle *Toby Shandy* more perturbations than you would imagine; and as my father's kindneſs to him was continually dragging up freſh friends and freſh inquirers, — he had but a very uneaſy taſk of it.

No doubt my uncle *Toby* had great command of himſelf, — and could guard appearances, I believe, as well as moſt men; — yet any one may imagine, that when he could not retreat out of the ravelin without getting into the half-moon, or get out of the covered way without falling down the counterſcarp, nor croſs the dyke without danger of ſlipping into the ditch, but that he muſt have fretted and fumed inwardly: —— He did ſo; — and theſe little and hourly vexations, which may ſeem trifling and of no account to the man who has not read *Hippocrates*, yet whoever has read *Hippocrates*, or Dr. *James Mackenzie*, and has conſidered well the effects which the paſſions and affections of the mind have upon the digeſtion, — (Why not of a wound as well as of a dinner?) — may eaſily

conceive what ſharp paroxyſms and exacerbations of his wound my uncle *Toby* muſt have undergone upon that ſcore only.

—— My uncle *Toby* could not philoſophize upon it — 'twas enough he felt it was ſo, — and having ſuſtained the pain and ſorrows of it for three months together, he was reſolved ſome way or other to extricate himſelf.

He was one morning lying upon his back in his bed, the anguiſh and nature of the wound upon his groin ſuffering him to lye in no other poſition, when a thought came into his head, that if he could purchaſe ſuch a thing, and have it paſted down upon a board, as a large map of the fortifications of the town and citadel of *Namur*, with its environs, it might be a means of giving him eaſe. —— I take notice of his deſire to have the environs along with the town and citadel, for this reaſon, — becauſe my uncle *Toby*'s wound was got in one of the traverſes, about thirty toiſes from the returning angle of the trench, oppoſite to the ſalient angle of the demi-baſtion of *St. Roch*; — ſo that he was pretty confident he could ſtick a pin upon the identical ſpot of ground where he was ſtanding in when the ſtone ſtruck him.

All this ſucceeded to his wiſhes, and not only freed him from a world of ſad explanations, but, in the end, it proved the happy means, as you will read, of procuring my uncle *Toby* his HOBBY-HORSE.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

THERE is nothing ſo fooliſh, when you are at the expence of making an entertainment of this kind, as to order things ſo badly, as to let your critics and gentry of refined taſte run it down: Nor is there any thing ſo likely to make them do it, as that of leaving them out of the party, or, what is full as offenſive, of beſtowing your attention upon the reſt of your gueſts in ſo particular a way, as if there was no ſuch thing as a critic (by occupation) at table.

——I guard againſt both; for, in the firſt place, I have left half a dozen places purpoſely open for them: — and, in the next place, I pay them all court — Gentlemen, I kiſs your hands, — I proteſt no company could give me half the pleaſure, — by my ſoul I am glad to ſee you, — I beg only you will make no ſtrangers of yourſelves, but ſit down without any ceremony, and fall on heartily.

I ſaid I had left ſix places and I was upon the point of carrying my complaiſance ſo far, as to have left a ſeventh open for them, — and in this very ſpot I ſtand on; — but being told by a critic, (tho' not by occupation, — but by nature) that I had acquitted myſelf well enough, I ſhall fill it up directly, hoping, in the mean time, that I ſhall be able to make a great deal of more room next year.

——How, in the name of wonder! could your uncle *Toby*, who it ſeems, was a military man, and whom you have repreſented as no fool, —— be at the ſame time ſuch a confuſed

pudding-headed, muddle-headed fellow, as— Go look.

So, Sir Critic, I could have replied; but I ſcorn it.——'Tis language unurbane,—and only befitting the man who cannot give clear and ſatisfactory accounts of things, or dive deep enough into the firſt cauſes of human ignorance and confuſion. It is moreover the reply valiant,—and therefore I reject it: for tho' it might have ſuited my uncle *Toby*'s character as a ſoldier excellently well,—and had he not accuſtomed himſelf, in ſuch attacks, to whiſtle the *Lillabullero*,—as he wanted no courage, 'tis the very anſwer he would have given; yet it would by no means have done for me. You ſee as plain as can be, that I write as a man of erudition;—that even my ſimilies, my alluſions, my illuſtrations, my metaphors, are erudite,—and that I muſt ſuſtain my character properly, and contraſt it properly too,—elſe what would become of me? Why, Sir, I ſhould be undone;—at this very moment that I am going here to fill up one place againſt a critic,—I ſhould have made an opening for a couple.

——Therefore I anſwer thus:

Pray, Sir, in all the reading which you have ever read, did you ever read ſuch a book as *Locke*'s Eſſay upon the Human Underſtanding?—Don't anſwer me raſhly,—becauſe many, I know, quote the book, who have not read it—and many have read it who underſtand it not:—If either of theſe is your caſe, as I write to inſtruct, I will tell you in three words what the book is. It is a hiſtory. A hiſtory! of who? what? where? when? Don't hurry yourſelf.—It is a hiſtory-book, Sir, (which may poſſibly

bly recommend it to the world) of what paſſes in a man's own mind; and if you will ſay ſo much of the book, and no more, believe me, you will cut no contemptible figure in a metaphyſic circle.

But this by the way.

Now if you will venture to go along with me, and look down into the bottom of this matter, it will be found that the cauſe of obſcurity and confuſion, in the mind of man, is threefold.

Dull organs, dear Sir, in the firſt place. Secondly, ſlight and tranſient impreſſions made by objects when the ſaid organs are not dull. And, thirdly, a memory like unto a ſieve not able to retain what it has received.——Call down *Dolly* your chamber-maid, and I will give you my cap and bell along with it, if I make not this matter ſo plain that *Dolly* herſelf ſhall underſtand it as well as *Malbranch.*——When *Dolly* has indited her epiſtle to *Robin*, and has thruſt her arm into the bottom of her pocket hanging by her right ſide; take that opportunity to recollect that the organs and faculties of perception, can, by nothing in this world, be ſo aptly typified and explained as by that one thing which *Dolly*'s hand is in ſearch of. Your organs are not ſo dull that I ſhould inform you—'tis an inch, Sir, of red ſeal-wax.

When this is melted and dropped upon the letter, if *Dolly* fumbles too long for her thimble, 'till the wax is over hardened, it will not receive the mark of her thimble from the uſual impulſe which was wont to imprint it. Very well: if *Dolly*'s wax, for want of better, is bees-wax, or of a temper too ſoft,—tho' it may receive,—it will not hold the impreſſion, how

hard ſoever *Dolly* thruſts againſt it; and laſt of all, ſuppoſing the wax good, and eke the thimble, but applied thereto in careleſs haſte, as her Miſtreſs rings the bell; — in any one of theſe three caſes, the print, left by the thimble, will be as unlike the prototype as a braſs-jack.

Now you muſt underſtand that not one of theſe was the true cauſe of the confuſion in my uncle *Toby*'s diſcourſe; and it is for that very reaſon I enlarge upon them ſo long, after the manner of great phyſiologiſts, — to ſhew the world what it did *not* ariſe from.

What did it ariſe from, I have hinted above, and a fertile ſource of obſcurity is it, — and ever will be — and that is the unſteady uſes of words which have perplexed the cleareſt and moſt exalted underſtandings.

It is ten to one, (at *Arthur*'s) whether you have ever read the literary hiſtories of paſt ages; —— if you have, —— what terrible battles, yclept logomachies, have they occaſioned and perpetuated with ſo much gall and ink-ſhed, — that a good natured man cannot read the accounts of them without tears in his eyes.

Gentle critic! when thou haſt weighed all this, and conſidered within thyſelf how much of thy own knowledge, diſcourſe, and converſation has been peſtered and diſordered, at one time or other, by this, and this only: ——— What a pudder and racket in COUNCILS about οὐσία and ὑπόστασις, and in the SCHOOLS of the learned about power and about ſpirit; — about eſſences and about quinteſſences; — about ſubſtances, and about ſpace. — What confuſion in greater THEATRES from words of little meaning, and as indeterminate a ſenſe: — when thou

thou conſidereſt this, thou wilt not wonder at my uncle *Toby*'s perplexities,—thou wilt drop a tear of pity upon his ſcarp and his counterſcarp; —his glacis and his covered-way; —his ravelin and his half-moon: 'Twas not by ideas,—by heaven! his life was put in jeopardy by words.

CHAP. III.

WHEN my uncle *Toby* got his map of *Namur* to his mind, he began immediately to apply himſelf, and with the utmoſt diligence, to the ſtudy of it; for nothing being of more importance to him than his recovery, and his recovery depending, as you have read, upon the paſſions and affections of his mind, it behoved him to take the niceſt care to make himſelf ſo far maſter of his ſubject, as to be able to talk upon it without emotion.

In a fortnight's cloſe and painful application, which, by the bye, did my uncle *Toby*'s wound, upon his groin, no good,—he was enabled, by the help of ſome marginal documents at the feet of the elephant, together with *Gobeſius*'s military architecture and pyrobology, tranſlated from the *Flemiſh*, to form his diſcourſe with paſſable perſpicuity; and, before he was two full months gone,—he was right eloquent upon it, and could make not only the attack of the advanced counterſcarp with great order;—but having, by that time, gone much deeper into the art, than what his firſt motive made neceſſary,—my uncle *Toby* was able to croſs the *Maes* and *Sambre*; make diverſions as far as *Vauban*'s line, the abbey of *Salſines*, *&c.* and give his viſiters as

diſtinct a hiſtory of each of their attacks, as of that of the gate of *St. Nicolas*, where he had the honour to receive his wound.

But the deſire of knowledge, like the thirſt of riches, encreaſes ever with the acquiſition of it. The more my uncle *Toby* pored over his map, the more he took a liking to it; — by the ſame proceſs and electrical aſſimulation, as I told you, thro' which I ween the ſouls of connoiſſeurs themſelves, by long friction and incumbition, have the happineſs, at length, to get all be-virtued, — be-pictured, — be-butterflied, and be-fiddled.

The more my uncle *Toby* drank of this ſweet fountain of ſcience, the greater was the heat and impatience of his thirſt, ſo that, before the firſt year of his confiement had well gone round, there was ſcarce a fortified town in *Italy* or *Flanders*, of which, by one means or other, he had not procured a plan, reading over as he got them, and carefully collating therewith the hiſtories of their ſieges, their demolitions, their improvements and new works, all which he would read with that intenſe application and delight, that he would forget himſelf, his wound, his confinement, his dinner.

In the ſecond year my uncle *Toby* purchaſed *Ramelli* and *Cataneo*, tranſlated from the *Italian*; — likewiſe *Stevinus*, *Marolis*, the Chevalier *de Ville*, *Lorini*, *Cochorn*, *Sheeter*, the Count *de Pagan*, the marſhal *Vauban*, Monſ. *Blondel*, with almoſt as many more books of military architecture, as Don *Quixote* was found to have of chivalry, when the curate and barber invaded his library.

Towards the beginning of the third year, which

which was in *Auguſt*, ninety-nine, my uncle *Toby* found it neceſſary to underſtand a little of projectiles: —— And having judged it beſt to draw his knowledge from the fountain-head, he began with *N. Tartaglia*, who it ſeems was the firſt man who detected the impoſition of a cannon-ball's doing all that miſchief under the notion of a right line. This *N. Tartaglia* proved to my uncle *Toby* to be an impoſſible thing.

——— Endleſs is the Search of Truth! —

No ſooner was my uncle *Toby* ſatisfied which road the cannon-ball did not go, but he was inſenſibly led on, and reſolved in his mind to enquire and find out which road the ball did go: For which purpoſe he was obliged to ſet off afreſh with old *Maltus*, and ſtudied him devoutly. He proceeded next to *Gallileo* and *Torricellius*, wherein, by certain geometrical rules, infallibly laid down, he found the preciſe path to be a PARABOLA, — or elſe an HYPERBOLA, — and that the parameter, or *latus rectum*, of the conic ſection of the ſaid path, was to the quantity and amplitude in a direct *ratio*, as the whole line to the ſign of double the angle of incidence, formed by the breech upon an horizontal plane; and — that the ſemiparameter, — ſtop! my dear uncle *Toby*, — ſtop! — go not one foot further into this thorny and bewildered track, — intricate are the ſteps! intricate are the mazes of this labyrinth! intricate are the troubles which the purſuit of this bewitching phantom, KNOWLEDGE, will bring upon thee. O my uncle! fly — fly — fly from it as from a ſerpent. —— Is it fit, good-natured man! thou ſhould'ſt ſit up, with the wound upon thy groin, whole nights baking thy blood with hectic watchings?

—— Alas!

—— Alas! 'twill exaſperate thy ſymptoms, — check thy perſpirations — evaporate thy ſpirits, — waſte thy animal ſtrength, — dry up thy radical moiſture, — bring thee into a coſtive habit of body, impair thy health, — and haſten all the infirmities of thy old age. O my uncle! my uncle *Toby!*

CHAP. IV.

I Would not give a groat for that man's knowledge in pen-craft, who does not underſtand this, — That the beſt plain narrative in the world, tacked very cloſe to the laſt ſpirited apoſtrophe to my uncle *Toby*, — would have felt both cold and vapid upon the reader's palate — therefore I forthwith put an end to the chapter, — though I was in the middle of my ſtory.

— Writers of my ſtamp have one principle in common with painters. — Where an exact copying makes our pictures leſs ſtriking, we chooſe the leſs evil; deeming it even more pardonable to treſpaſs againſt truth, than beauty. — This is to be underſtood *cum grano ſalis*; but be it as it will, — as the parallel is made more for the ſake of letting the apoſtrophe cool, than any thing elſe, — 'tis not very material whether upon any other ſcore the reader approves of it or not.

In the latter end of the third year, my uncle *Toby* perceiving that the parameter and ſemi-parameter of the conic ſection, angered his wound, he left off the ſtudy of projectiles in a kind of a huff, and betook himſelf to the practical part of fortification only; the pleaſure of which,

which, like a ſpring held back, returned upon him with redoubled force.

It was in this year that my uncle began to break in upon the daily regularity of a clean ſhirt,—to diſmiſs his barber unſhaven,—and to allow his ſurgeon ſcarce time ſufficient to dreſs his wound, concerning himſelf ſo little about it, as not to aſk him once in ſeven times dreſſing how it went on: When, lo!—all of a ſudden, for the change was as quick as lightning, he began to ſigh heavily for his recovery,—complained to my father, grew impatient with the ſurgeon;—and one morning as he heard his foot coming up ſtairs, he ſhut up his books, and thruſt aſide his inſtruments, in order to expoſtulate with him upon the protraction of his cure, which, he told him, might ſurely have been accompliſhed at leaſt by that time——He dwelt long upon the miſeries he had undergone, and the ſorrows of his four years melancholy impriſonment:—adding, that had it not been for the kind looks, and fraternal chearings of the beſt of brothers,—he had long ſince ſunk under his misfortunes.——My father was by: My uncle *Toby*'s eloquence brought tears into his eyes;—'twas unexpected.——My uncle *Toby* by nature, was not eloquent;—it had the greater effect.——The ſurgeon was confounded;—not that there wanted grounds for ſuch, or greater, marks of impatience,—but 'twas unexpected too; in the four years he had attended him, he had never ſeen any thing like it in my uncle *Toby*'s carriage;—he had never once dropped one fretful or diſcontented word;—he had been all patience,—all ſubmiſſion.

——We loſe the right of complaining ſometimes

times by forbearing it; — but we oftener treble the force: —— The ſurgeon was aſtoniſhed; — but much more ſo, when, he heard my uncle *Toby* go on, and peremptorily inſiſt upon his healing up the wound directly, — or ſending for Monſieur *Ronjat*, the King's Serjeant-ſurgeon, to do it for him.

The deſire of life and health is implanted in man's nature; — the love of liberty and enlargement is a ſiſter paſſion to it: Theſe my uncle *Toby* had in common with his ſpecies; — and either of them had been ſufficient to account for his earneſt deſire to get well and out of doors; but I have told you before that nothing wrought with our family after the common way; — and from the time and manner in which this eager deſire ſhewed itſelf in the preſent caſe, the penetrating reader will ſuſpect there was ſome other cauſe or crotchet for it in my uncle *Toby*'s head: —— There was ſo, and 'tis the ſubject of the next chapter to ſet forth what that cauſe and crotchet was. I own, when that's done, 'twill be time to return back to the parlour fire-ſide, where we left my uncle *Toby* in the middle of his ſentence.

CHAP. V.

WHEN a man gives himſelf up to the government of a ruling paſſion, — or, in other words, when his HOBBY-HORSE grows headſtrong, —— farewell cool reaſon and fair diſcretion.

My uncle *Toby*'s wound was near well, and as ſoon as the ſurgeon recovered his ſurprize, and could

could get leave to ſay as much — he told him, 'twas juſt beginning to incarnate; and that if no freſh exfoliation happened, which there were no ſigns of, — it would be dried up in five or ſix weeks. The ſound of as many olympiads twelve hours before, would have conveyed an idea of ſhorter duration to my uncle *Toby*'s mind —— The ſucceſſion of his ideas was now rapid,— he broiled with impatience to put his deſign in execution; — and ſo, without conſulting further with any ſoul living, — which, by the bye, I think its right, when you are predetermined to take no one ſoul's advice, — he privately ordered *Trim*, his man, to pack up a bundle of lint and dreſſings, and hire a chariot and four to be at the door exactly by twelve o'clock that day, when he knew my father would be upon 'Change. — So leaving a bank-note upon the table for the ſurgeon's care of him, and a letter of tender thanks for his brother's, — he pack'd up his maps, his books of fortification, his inſtruments, *&c.* — and, by the help of a crutch on one ſide, and *Trim* on the other, my uncle *Toby* embarked for *Shandy-Hall*.

The reaſon, or rather the riſe, of this ſudden demigration, was as follows:

The table in my uncle *Toby*'s room, and at which, the night before this change happened, he was ſitting with his maps, *&c.* about him, — being ſomewhat of the ſmalleſt, for that infinity of great and ſmall inſtruments of knowledge which uſually lay crowded upon it; — he had the accident, in reaching over for his tobacco-box, to throw down his compaſſes, and in ſtooping to take the compaſſes up, with his ſleeve he threw

threw down his caſe of inſtruments and ſnuffers; —and as the dice took a run againſt him, in his endeavouring to catch the ſnuffers in falling — he thruſt Monſieur *Blondell* off the table and Count de *Pagan* o'top of him.

'Twas to no purpoſe for a man lame as my uncle *Toby* was, to think of redreſſing all theſe evils by himſelf, — he rung his bell for his man *Trim*; — *Trim!* quoth my uncle *Toby*, pri'thee ſee what confuſion I have here been making. — I muſt have ſome better contrivance, — *Trim*.-- Can'ſt not thou take my rule and meaſure the length and breadth of this table, and then go and beſpeak me one as big again? —— Yes, an' pleaſe your honour, replied *Trim*, making a bow; — but I hope your honour will be ſoon well enough to get down to your country ſeat, where, — as your honour takes ſo much pleaſure in fortification, — we could manage this matter to a T.

I muſt here inform you that this ſervant of my uncle *Toby*'s who went by the name of *Trim*, had been a Corporal in my uncle's own company, — his real name was *James Butler*, — but having got the nick-name of *Trim* in the regiment, my uncle *Toby*, unleſs when he happened to be very angry with him, would never call him by any other name.

The poor fellow had been diſabled for the ſervice, by a wound on his left knee by a muſket-bullet, at the battle of *Landen*, which was two years before the affair of *Namur*; —— and as the fellow was well beloved in the regiment, and a handy fellow into the bargain, my uncle *Toby* took him for his ſervant, and of excellent uſe was he, attending my uncle *Toby* in the camp and

and in his quarters as valet, groom, barber, cook, ſempſter, and nurſe; and indeed, from firſt to laſt, waited upon him and ſerved him with great fidelity and affection.

My uncle *Toby* loved the man in return, and what attached him more to him ſtill, was the ſimilitude of their knowledge: —— For Corporal *Trim*, (for ſo, for the future, I ſhall call him) by four years occaſional attention to his Maſter's diſcourſe upon fortified towns, and the advantage of prying and peeping continually into his Maſter's plans, *&c.* excluſive and beſides what he gained HOBBY-HORSICALLY, as a body-ſervant, *Non Hobby-Horſical per ſe*; — had become no mean proficient in the ſcience; and was thought, by the cook and chamber-maid, to know as much of the nature of ſtrong-holds as my uncle *Toby* himſelf.

I have but one more ſtroke to give to finiſh Corporal *Trim*'s character, — and it is the only dark line in it. The fellow loved to adviſe, — or rather to hear himſelf talk; his carriage, however was ſo perfectly reſpectful, 'twas eaſy to keep him ſilent when you had him ſo; but ſet his tongue a-going, — you had no hold of him; — he was voluble; —— the eternal interlardings of *your Honour*, with the reſpectfulneſs of Corporal *Trim*'s manner, interceding ſo ſtrong in behalf of his elocution, — that tho' you might have been incommoded, — you could not well be angry. My uncle *Toby* was ſeldom either the one or the other with him, —— or, at leaſt, this fault, in *Trim*, broke no ſquares with 'em. My uncle *Toby*, as I ſaid, loved the man; — and beſides, as he ever looked upon a faithful ſervant, — but as an humble friend, — he could not

not bear to ſtop his mouth. Such was Corporal *Trim*.

If I durſt preſume, continued *Trim*, to give your Honour my advice, and ſpeak my opinion in this matter —— Thou art welcome, *Trim*, quoth my uncle *Toby*,—ſpeak,—ſpeak what thou thinkeſt upon the ſubject, man, without fear. Why then, replied *Trim*, (not hanging his ears and ſcratching his head like a country lout, but) ſtroking his hair back from his forehead, and ſtanding erect as before his diviſion. — I think, quoth *Trim*, advancing his left, which was his lame leg, a little forwards, —— and pointing with his right hand open towards a map of *Dunkirk*, which was pinned againſt the hangings, —— I think, quoth Corporal *Trim*, with humble ſubmiſſion to your Honour's better judgment, — that theſe ravelins, baſtions, curtins, and horn-works make but a poor, contemptible, fiddle-faddle piece of work of it here upon paper, compared to what your Honour and I could make of it, were we in the country by ourſelves, and had but a rood, or a rood and a half of ground to do what we pleaſed with: As ſummer is coming on, continued *Trim*, your Honour might ſit out of doors, and give me the nography — (call it ichnography, quoth my uncle) — of the town or citadel, your Honour was pleaſed to ſit down before,—and I will be ſhot by your Honour upon the glacis of it, if I did not fortify it to your Honour's mind. I dare ſay thou would'ſt, *Trim*, quoth my uncle. For if your Honour, continued the Corporal could but mark me the polygon, with its exact lines and angles, — that I could do very well, quoth my uncle. I would begin with the foſſé, and if your

your Honour could tell me the proper depth and breadth —— I can to a hair's breadth, *Trim*, replied my uncle — I would throw out the earth upon this hand towards the town for the ſcarp, — and on that hand towards the campaign for the counterſcarp, — very right, *Trim*, quoth my uncle *Toby*, —— and when I had ſloped them to your mind, — an' pleaſe your Honour, I would face the glacis, as the fineſt fortifications are done in *Flanders*, with ſods, — and as your Honour knows they ſhould be, — and I would make the walls and parapets with ſods too; — the beſt engineers call them gazons, *Trim*, ſaid my uncle *Toby*; —— whether they are gazons or ſods, is not much matter, replied *Trim*, your Honour knows they are ten times beyond a facing either of brick or ſtone; — I know they are, *Trim*, in ſome reſpects, — quoth my uncle *Toby*, nodding his head; —— for a cannon-ball enters into the gazon right onwards, without bringing any rubbiſh down with it, which might fill the foſſe, (as was the caſe at *St. Nicolas's Gate*) and facilitate the paſſage over it.

Your Honour underſtands theſe matters, replied Corporal *Trim*, better than any officer in his Majeſty's ſervice; —— but would your Honour pleaſe to let the beſpeaking of the table alone, and let us but go into the country, I would work under your Honour's directions like a horſe, and make fortifications for you ſomething like a tanſy, with all their batteries, ſaps, ditches, and palliſadoes, that it ſhould be worth all the world's riding twenty miles to go and ſee it.

My uncle *Toby* bluſhed as red as ſcarlet as *Trim* went on; —— but it was not a bluſh of guilt, — of modeſty, — or of anger; it was a bluſh

bluſh of joy; —— he was fired with Corporal *Trim*'s project and deſcription. —— *Trim!* ſaid my uncle *Toby*, thou haſt ſaid enough. — We might begin the campaign, continued *Trim*, on the very day that his Majeſty and the Allies take the field, and demoliſh 'em town by town as faſt as ——— *Trim*, quoth my uncle *Toby*, ſay no more. ——— Your Honour, continued *Trim*, might ſit in your arm-chair, (pointing to it) this fine weather, giving me your orders, and I would —— Say no more, *Trim*, quoth my uncle *Toby*. —— Beſides, your Honour would get not only pleaſure and good paſtime, — but good air, and good exerciſe, and good health, — and your Honour's wound would be well in a month. Thou haſt ſaid enough, *Trim*, —quoth my uncle *Toby*, (putting his hand into his breeches-pocket) — I like thy project mightily; —and if your Honour pleaſes, I'll, this moment, go and buy a pioneer's ſpade to take down with us, and I'll beſpeak a ſhovel and a pick-ax, and a couple of — Say no more, *Trim*, quoth my uncle *Toby*, leaping up upon one leg, quite overcome with rapture, —— and thruſting a guinea into *Trim*'s hand. — *Trim*, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, ſay no more; —but go down, *Trim*, this moment, my lad, and bring up my ſupper this inſtant.

Trim ran down and brought up his Maſter's ſupper, —to no purpoſe: —*Trim*'s plan of operation ran ſo in my uncle *Toby*'s head, he could not taſte it. — *Trim*, quoth my uncle *Toby*, get me to bed; — 'twas all one. — Corporal *Trim*'s deſcription had ſo fired his imagination, my uncle *Toby* could not ſhut his eyes. — The more he conſidered it, the more bewitching the ſcene appeared to him; — ſo that two full hours before day-

day-light, he had come to a final determination, and had concerted the whole plan of his and Corporal *Trim*'s decampment.

My uncle *Toby* had a little neat country-houſe of his own, in the village where my father's eſtate lay at *Shandy*, which had been left him by an old uncle, with a ſmall eſtate of about one hundred pounds a year. Behind this houſe, and contiguous to it, was a kitchen-garden of about half an acre; — and at the bottom of the garden, and cut off from it by a tall yew-hedge, was a bowling green, containing juſt about as much ground as Corporal *Trim* wiſhed for; — ſo that as *Trim* uttered the words, "A rood and a half of ground to do what they would with;" — This identical bowling-green inſtantly preſented itſelf, and became curiouſly painted all at once, upon the retina of my uncle *Toby*'s fancy, — which was the phyſical cauſe of making him change colour, or at leaſt of heightening his bluſh to that immoderate degree I ſpoke of.

Never did lover poſt down to a beloved miſtreſs with more heat and expectation, than my uncle *Toby* did, to enjoy the ſelf-ſame thing in private; — I ſay in private; — for it was ſheltered from the houſe as I told you, by a tall yew-hedge, and was covered on the other three ſides from mortal ſight, by rough holly and thickſet flowering ſhrubs; — ſo that the idea of not been ſeen, did not a little contribute to the idea of pleaſure preconceived in my uncle *Toby*'s mind. — Vain thought! however thick it was planted about, or private ſoever it might ſeem, —— to think, dear uncle *Toby*, of enjoying a thing which took up a whole rood and a half of ground, — and not have it known!

How

How my uncle *Toby* and Corporal *Trim* managed this matter, — with the hiſtory of their campaigns, which were no way barren of events, — may make no unintereſting under-plot in the epitaſis and working up of this drama. — At preſent the ſcene muſt drop, — and change for the parlour fire-ſide.

CHAP. VI.

——— What can they be doing, brother? ſaid my father. —— I think, replied my uncle *Toby*,—taking, as I told you, his pipe from his mouth, and ſtriking the aſhes out of it as he began his ſentence; — I think replied he, — it would not be amiſs, brother, if we rung the bell.

Pray, what's all that racket over our heads, *Obadiah?* — quoth my father; — my brother and I can ſcarce hear ourſelves ſpeak.

Sir, anſwered *Obadiah*, making a bow towards his left ſhoulder, — my Miſtreſs is taken very badly; — and there's *Suſannah* running down the garden there, as if they were going to raviſh her. — Sir, ſhe is running the ſhorteſt cut into the town, replied *Obadiah*, to fetch the old midwife —— Then ſaddle a horſe, quoth my father, and do you go directly for Dr. *Slop*, the man-midwife, with all our ſervices, — and let him know your Miſtreſs is fallen in labour, — and that I deſire he will return with you with all ſpeed.

It is very ſtrange, ſays my father, addreſſing himſelf to my uncle *Toby*, as *Obadiah* ſhut the door, — as there is ſo expert an operator as

Dr.

Dr. *Slop* ſo near — that my wife ſhould perſiſt to the very laſt in this obſtinate humour of hers, in truſting the life of my child, who has had one misfortune already, to the ignorance of an old woman; — and not only the life of my child, brother, — but her own life, and with it the lives of all the children I might, peradventure, have begot out of her hereafter.

Mayhap, brother, replied my uncle *Toby*, my ſiſter does it to ſave the expence: — A pudding's-end, — replied my father, — the Doctor muſt be paid the ſame for inaction as action, — If not better, — to keep him in temper.

—— Then it can be out of nothing in the whole world, quoth my uncle *Toby*, in the ſimplicity of his heart, — but MODESTY: — My ſiſter, I dare ſay, added he, does not care to let a man come ſo near her ****. I will not ſay whether my uncle *Toby* had compleated the ſentence or not; — 'tis for his advantage to ſuppoſe he had, — as, I think, he could have added no ONE WORD which would have improved it.

If on the contrary, my uncle *Toby* had not fully arrived at his period's end, — then the world ſtands indebted to the ſudden ſnapping of my father's tobacco-pipe, for one of the neateſt examples of that ornamental figure in oratory, which Rhetoricians ſtile the *Apoſiopeſis*. — Juſt heaven! how does the *Poco Piu* and the *Poco meno* of the *Italian* artiſts; — the inſenſible, more or leſs determine the preciſe line of beauty in the ſentence as well as in the ſtatue! How do the ſlight touches of the chiſel, the pencil, the pen, the fiddle-ſtick, *et cætera*, give the true ſwell, which gives the true pleaſure! — Or my countrymen! — be nice; be cautious of you

your language; — and never, O! never let it be forgotten upon what ſmall particles your eloquence and your fame depend.

—— " My ſiſter, mayhap, quoth my uncle " *Toby*, does not chooſe to let a man come ſo " near her ****" Make this daſh, ——'tis an Apoſiopeſis.—— Take the daſh away, and write Backſide, —'tis Bawdy. —— Scratch Backſide out, and put *cover'd way* in,—'tis a metaphor; and, I dare ſay, as fortification ran ſo much in my uncle *Toby*'s head, that if he had been left to have added one word to the ſentence,— that word was it.

But whether that was the caſe or not the caſe; — or whether the ſnapping of my father's tobacco-pipe ſo critically happened thro' accident or anger,—will be ſeen in due time.

CHAP. VII.

THO' my father was a good natural philoſopher, — yet he was ſomething of a moral philoſopher too; for which reaſon, when his tobacco-pipe ſnapp'd ſhort in the middle, — he had nothing to do, — as ſuch, — but to have taken hold of the two pieces, and thrown them gently upon the back of the fire. — He did no ſuch thing; — he threw them with all the violence in the world; — and, to give action ſtill the more emphaſis, — he ſtarted up upon both his legs to do it.

This look'd ſomething like heat; — and the manner of his reply to what my uncle *Toby* was ſaying proved it was ſo.

—— " Not chooſe, quoth my father, repeating

peating my uncle *Toby*'s words) to let a man come ſo near her —" By heaven, brother *Toby!* you would try the patience of a *Job*; and I think I have the plagues of one already, without it. — Why? — Where? — Wherein? — Wherefore? — Upon what account, replied my uncle *Toby*, in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment. — To think, ſaid my father, of a man living to your age, brother, and knowing ſo little about women! — I know nothing at all about them — replied my uncle *Toby*; and I think, continued he, that the ſhock I received the year after the demolition of *Dunkirk*, in my affair with widow *Wadman*; — which ſhock you know I ſhould not have received, but from my total ignorance of the ſex, — has given me juſt cauſe to ſay, That I neither know, nor do pretend to know, any thing about 'em, or their concerns either. — Methinks, brother, replied my father, you might, at leaſt, know ſo much as the right end of a woman from the wrong.

It is ſaid in *Ariſtotle's Maſter Piece*, " That " when a man doth think of any thing which " is paſt, — he looketh down upon the ground; " — but that when he thinketh of ſomething " which is to come, he looketh up towards the " heavens."

My uncle *Toby*, I ſuppoſe, thought of neither, — for he look'd horizontally. —— Right end, — quoth my uncle *Toby*, muttering the two words low to himſelf, and fixing his two eyes inſenſibly as he muttered them, upon a ſmall crevice, form'd by a bad joint in the chimney-piece. —— Right end of a woman! — I declare, quoth my uncle, I know no more which it is, than the man in the moon; — and if I was to think, con-

tinued my uncle *Toby*, (keeping his eyes ſtill fix'd upon the bad joint) this month together, I am ſure I ſhould not be able to find it out.

Then brother *Toby*, replied my father, I will tell you.

Every thing in this world, continued my father, (filling a freſh pipe) — every thing in this earthly world, my dear brother *Toby*, has two handles; — not always, quoth my uncle *Toby*; at leaſt, replied my father, every one has two hands, — which comes to the ſame thing. — Now, if a man was to ſit down coolly, and conſider within himſelf the make, the ſhape, the conſtruction, com-at-ability, and convenience of all the parts which conſtitute the whole of that animal, call'd Woman, and compare them analogically — I never underſtood rightly the meaning of that word, quoth my uncle *Toby*. — ANALOGY, replied my father, is the certain relation and agreement, which different —— Here a Devil of a rap at the door ſnapped my father's definition (like his tobacco-pipe) in two, — and at the ſame time, cruſhed the head of as notable and curious a diſſertation as ever was engendered in the womb of ſpeculation; — it was ſome months before my father could get an opportunity to be ſafely deliver'd of it; — And, at this hour, it is a thing full as problematical as the ſubject of the diſſertation itſelf, — (conſidering the confuſion and diſtreſſes of our domeſtic miſadventures, which are now coming thick one upon the back of another) whether I ſhall be able to find a place for it in the third volume or not.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

IT is about an hour and a half's tolerable good reading ſince my uncle *Toby* rung the bell, when *Obadiah* was order'd to ſaddle a horſe, and go for Dr. *Slop*, the man-midwife; — ſo that no one can ſay with reaſon, that I have not allowed *Obadiah* time enough, poetically ſpeaking, and conſidering the emergency too, both to go and come; — tho', morally and truly ſpeaking, the man, perhaps, has ſcarce had time to get on his boots.

If the hypercritic will go upon this; and is reſolved after all to take a pendulum, and meaſure the true diſtance betwixt the ringing of the bell and the rap at the door; — and, after finding it to be no more than two minutes, thirteen ſeconds, and three fifths, — ſhould take upon him to inſult over me for ſuch a breach in the unity, or rather probability, of time; —— I would remind him, that the idea of duration and of its ſimple modes, is got merely from the train and ſucceſſion of our ideas, — and is the true ſcholaſtick pendulum, — and by which, as a ſcholar, I will be tried in this matter, — abjuring and deteſting the juriſdiction of all other pendulums whatever.

I would, therefore, deſire him to conſider that it is but poor eight miles from *Shandy-hall* to Dr. *Slop*, the man-widwife's houſe; — and that whilſt *Obadiah* has been going the ſaid miles and back, I have brought my uncle *Toby* from *Namur*, quite acroſs all *Flanders*, into *England*: — That I have had him ill upon my hands near four

years; — and have ſince travelled him and corporal *Trim*, in a chariot and four, a journey of near two hundred miles down into *Yorkſhire*; — all which put together muſt have prepared the reader's imagination for the entrance of Dr. *Slop* upon the ſtage, — as much, at leaſt, (I hope) as a dance, a ſong, or a concerto between the acts.

If my hypercritic is intractable, — alledging, that two minutes and thirteen ſeconds, are no more than two minutes and thirteen ſeconds, — when I have ſaid all I can about them; ——— and that this plea, tho' it might ſave me dramatically, will damn me biographically, rendering my book, from this very moment, a profeſs'd ROMANCE, which, before was a book apocryphal: —— If I am thus preſſed — I then put an end to the whole objection and controverſy about it all at once, — by acquainting him that *Obadiah* had not got above threeſcore yards from the ſtable-yard before he met with Dr. *Slop*; — and indeed he gave a dirty proof that he had met with him, — and was within an ace of giving a tragical one too.

Imagine to yourſelf; — but this had better begin a new chapter.

CHAP. IX.

IMagine to yourſelf a little, ſquat, uncourtly figure of a doctor *Slop*, of about four feet and a half perpendicular height, with a breadth of back, and a ſeſquipedality of belly, which might have done honour to a Serjeant in the Horſe-Guards.

Such

Such were the out-lines of Dr. *Slop*'s figure, which, — if you have read *Hogarth*'s analyſis of beauty, and if you have not, I wiſh you would; — you muſt know, may as certainly be caracatur'd, and convey'd to the mind by three ſtrokes as three hundred.

Imagine ſuch a one, — for ſuch, I ſay, were the out-lines of Dr. *Slop*'s figure, coming ſlowly along, foot by foot, waddling thro' the dirt upon the vertebræ of a little diminutive pony, — of a pretty colour; — but of ſtrength, — alack! — ſcarce able to have made an amble of it, under ſuch a fardel, had the roads been in an ambling condition. —— They were not —— Imagine to yourſelf, *Obadiah* mounted upon a ſtrong monſter of a coach-horſe, prick'd into a full gallop, and making all practicable ſpeed the adverſe way.

Pray, Sir, let me intereſt you a moment in this deſcription.

Had Dr. *Slop* beheld *Obadiah* a mile off poſting in a narrow lane directly towards him, at that monſtrous rate, — ſplaſhing and plunging like a devil thro' thick and thin, as he approach'd, would not ſuch a phenomenon, with ſuch a vortex of mud and water moving along with it, round its axis, — have been a ſubject of juſter apprehenſion to Dr. *Slop* in his ſituation, than the *worſt* of *Whiſton*'s comets? —— To ſay nothing of the NUCLEUS; that is, of *Obadiah* and the coach-horſe. —— In my idea, the vortex alone of 'em was enough to have involved and carried, if not the Doctor, at leaſt the Doctor's pony quite away with it. What then do you think muſt the terror and hydrophobia of Dr. *Slop* have been, when you read,

(which you are juſt going to do) that he was advancing thus warily along towards *Shandy-Hall*, and had approach'd to within ſixty yards of it, and within five yards of a ſudden turn, made by an acute angle of the garden wall, — and in the dirtieſt part of a dirty lane, — when *Obadiah* and his coach-horſe turn'd the corner, rapid, furious, — pop — full upon him! — Nothing, I think in nature, can be ſuppoſed more terrible, than ſuch a Rencounter, — ſo imprompt! ſo ill prepared to ſtand the ſhock of it as Dr. *Slop* was.

What could Dr. *Slop* do? —— He croſs'd himſelf ✝ —— Pugh! —— but the Doctor, Sir, was a papiſt. —— No matter; he had better have kept hold of the pummel. — He had ſo; — nay, as it happen'd, he had better have done nothing at all; — for in croſſing himſelf he let go his whip, — and in attempting to ſave his whip betwixt his knee and his ſaddle's ſkirt, as it ſlipp'd, he loſt his ſtirrup, — in loſing which, he loſt his ſeat; — and in the multitude of all theſe loſſes, (which, by the bye, ſhews what little advantage there is in croſſing) the unfortunate Doctor loſt his preſence of mind. So that, without waiting for *Obadiah*'s onſet, he left his pony to its deſtiny, tumbling off it diagonally, ſomething in the ſtile and manner of a pack of wool, and without any other conſequence from the fall, ſave that of being left, (as it would have been) with the broadeſt part of him ſunk about twelve inches deep in the mire.

Obadiah pull'd off his cap twice to Dr. *Slop*; — once as he was falling, and then again when he ſaw him ſeated. —— Ill tim'd complaiſance!

ſance! — had not the fellow better have ſtopp'd his horſe, and got off and help'd him? ——— Sir, he did all that his ſituation would allow; — but the MOMENTUM of the coach horſe was ſo great, that *Obadiah* could not do it all at once; —— he rode in a circle three times round Dr. *Slop*, before he could fully accompliſh it any how; — and at the laſt when he did ſtop his beaſt, 'twas done with ſuch an exploſion of mud, that *Obadiah* had better have been a league off. In ſhort, never was a Dr. *Slop* ſo beluted, and ſo tranſubſtantiated, ſince that affair came into faſhion.

CHAP. X.

WHEN Dr. *Slop* entered the back parlour, where my father and my uncle *Toby* were diſcourſing upon the nature of women, — it was hard to determine whether Dr. *Slop*'s figure, or Dr. *Slop*'s preſence, occaſioned more ſurprize to them; for as the accident happened ſo near the houſe, as not to make it worth while for *Obadiah* to remount him, ——— *Obadiah* had led him in as he was, *unwiped*, *unappointed*, *unanealed*, with all his ſtains and blotches on him. —— He ſtood like *Hamlet*'s ghoſt, motionleſs and ſpeechleſs, for a full minute and a half, at the parlour door, (*Obadiah* ſtill holding his hand) with all the majeſty of mud. His hinder parts, upon which he had received his fall, totally beſmear'd, — and in every other part of him, blotched over in ſuch a manner with *Obadiah*'s exploſion, that you would have

ſworn, (without mental reſervation) that every grain of it had taken effect.

Here was a fair opportunity for my uncle *Toby* to have triumph'd over my father in his turn; for no mortal, who had beheld Dr. *Slop* in that pickle, could have diſſented from ſo much, at leaſt, of my uncle *Toby*'s opinion, "That "mayhap his ſiſter might not care to let ſuch a "Dr. *Slop* come ſo near her ****". But it was the *Argumentum ad hominem*; and if my uncle *Toby* was not very expert at it, you may think, he might not care to uſe it. No; the reaſon was, — 'twas not his nature to inſult.

Dr. *Slop*'s preſence, at that time, was no leſs problematical than the mode of it, tho', it is certain, one moment's reflection in my father might have ſolved it; for he had apprized Dr. *Slop* but the week before, that my mother was at her full reckoning; and as the Doctor had heard nothing ſince, 'twas natural and very political too in him, to have taken a ride to *Shandy-Hall*, as he did, merely to ſee how matters went on.

But my father's mind took unfortunately a wrong turn in the inveſtigation; running, like the hypercritick's altogether upon the ringing of the bell and the rap upon the door, — meaſuring their diſtance — and keeping his mind ſo intent upon the operation, as to have power to think of nothing elſe, —— common-place infirmity of the greateſt mathematicians! working with might and main at the demonſtration, and ſo waſting all their ſtrength upon it, that they have none left in them to draw the corollary, to do good with.

The ringing of the bell and the rap upon the door,

door, ſtruck likewiſe ſtrong upon the ſenſorium of my uncle *Toby*, — but it excited a very different train of thoughts; —— the two irreconcileable pulſations inſtantly brought *Stevinus*, the great engineer, along with them, into my uncle *Toby*'s mind —— What buſineſs *Stevinus*, had in this affair, is the greateſt problem of all; — it ſhall be ſolved, — but not in the next chapter.

CHAP. XI.

WRITING, when properly managed, (as you may be ſure I think mine is) is but a different name for converſation: As no one, who knows what he is about in good company, would venture to talk all; — ſo no author, who underſtands the juſt boundaries of decorum and good breeding, would preſume to think all: The trueſt reſpect which you can pay to the reader's underſtanding, is to halve this matter amicably, and leave him ſomething to imagine, in his turn, as well as yourſelf.

For my own part, I am eternally paying him compliments of this kind, and do all that lies in my power to keep his imagination as buſy as my own.

'Tis his turn now: — I have given an ample deſcription of Dr. *Slop*'s ſad overthrow, and of his ſad appearance in the back parlour; his imagination muſt now go on with it for a while.

Let the reader imagine then, that Dr. *Slop* has told his tale; — and in what words, and with what aggravations his fancy chooſes: — Let him ſuppoſe that *Obadiah* has told his tale alſo, and with ſuch rueful looks of affected concern, as

he thinks will beſt contraſt the two figures as they ſtand by each other: Let him imagine that my father has ſtepp'd up ſtairs to ſee my mother: And, to conclude this work of imagination, — let him imagine the Doctor waſh'd, — rubb'd down, — condoled with, — felicitated, — got into a pair of *Obadiah*'s pumps, ſtepping forwards towards the door, upon the very point of entering upon action.

Truce! — truce, good Dr. *Slop!* — ſtay thy obſtetric hand — return it ſafe into thy boſom to keep it warm; — little do'ſt thou know what obſtacles: — little doſt thou think what hidden cauſes retard its operation! Haſt thou, Dr. *Slop*, — haſt thou been intruſted with the ſecret articles of this ſolemn treaty which has brought thee into this place? Art thou aware that, at this inſtant, a daughter of *Lucina* is put obſtetrically over thy head? Alas! 'tis too true. Beſides, great ſon of *Pilumnus!* what canſt thou do? — Thou haſt come forth unarm'd; — thou haſt left thy *tire-tete*, — thy new-invented *forceps*, — thy *crotchet*, — thy *ſquirt*, — and all thy inſtruments of ſalvation and deliverance behind thee. — By heaven! at this moment they are hanging up in a green bays bag, betwixt thy two piſtols, at thy bed's head! — Ring; — call; — ſend *Obadiah* back upon the coach-horſe to bring them with all ſpeed.

—— Make great haſte, *Obadiah*, quoth my father, and I'll give thee a crown; — and, quoth my uncle *Toby*, I'll give him another.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

YOUR ſudden and unexpected arrival, quoth my uncle *Toby*, addreſſing himſelf to Dr. *Slop*, (all three of them ſitting down to the fire together, as my uncle *Toby* began to ſpeak) — inſtantly brought the great *Stevinus* into my head, who, you muſt know, is a favourite author with me. — Then, added my father, making uſe of the argument, *Ad Crumenam*, — I will lay twenty guineas to a ſingle crown piece, (which will ſerve to give away to *Obadiah* when he gets back) that this ſame *Stevinus* was ſome engineer or other, — or has wrote ſomething or other, either directly or indirectly, upon the ſcience of fortification.

He has ſo, — replied my uncle *Toby*. ——— I knew it, ſaid my father; — tho' for the ſoul of me, I cannot ſee what kind of connection there can be betwixt Dr. *Slop*'s ſudden coming, and a diſcourſe upon fortification; — yet I feared it. — Talk of what we will, brother, — or let the occaſion be never ſo foreign or unfit for the ſubject, — you are ſure to bring it in: I would not, brother *Toby*, continued my father, — I declare I would not have my head ſo full of curtins and horn-works — That, I dare ſay, you would not, quoth Dr. *Slop*, interrupting him, and laughing moſt immoderately at his pun.

Dennis the critick could not deteſt and abhor a pun, or the inſinuation of a pun, more cordially than my father; — he would grow teſty upon it at any time; — but to be broke in upon by one, in a ſerious diſcourſe, was as bad,

bad, he would ſay, as a fillip upon the noſe;—he ſaw no difference.

Sir, quoth my uncle *Toby*, addreſſing himſelf to Dr. *Slop*—the curtins, my brother *Shandy* mentions here, have nothing to do with bedſteads;—tho', I know, *Du Cange* ſays, "That bed-curtains, in all probability, have taken their name from them;—nor have the horn-works, he ſpeaks of, any thing in the world to do with the horn-works of cuckoldom:—But the *curtin*, Sir, is the word we uſe in fortification, for that part of the wall or rampart which lies between the two baſtions and joins them.——Beſiegers ſeldom offer to carry on their attacks directly againſt the curtin, for this reaſon, becauſe they are ſo well *flanked*; ('tis the caſe of other curtains, quoth Dr. *Slop*, laughing) however, continued my uncle *Toby*, to make them ſure, we generally chooſe to place ravelins before them, taking care only to extend them beyond the foſſe or ditch:—The common men, who know very little of fortification, confound the ravelin and the half-moon together,—tho' they are very different things;—not in their figure or conſtruction, for we make them exactly alike in all points; for they always conſiſt of two faces, making a ſalient angle, with the gorges, not ſtrait, but in form of a creſcent.——Where then lies the difference? (quoth my father, a little teſtily)—In their ſituations, anſwered my uncle *Toby*:—For when a ravelin, brother, ſtands before the curtin, it is a ravelin; and when a ravelin ſtands before a baſtion, then the ravelin is not a ravelin;—it is a half-moon—a half-moon likewiſe is a half-moon, and no more, ſo long as it ſtands before its baſtion;—but was

it

it to change place, and get before the curtin, — 'twould be no longer a half-moon; a half-moon, in that caſe, is not a half-moon; — 'tis no more than a ravelin. — I think, quoth my father, that the noble ſcience of defence has its weak ſides, — as well as others.

——— As for the horn-works (high ho! ſigh'd my father) which, continued my uncle *Toby*, my brother was ſpeaking of, they are a very conſiderable part of an outwork; — they are called by the *French* engineers, *Ouvrage à corne*, and we generally make them to cover ſuch places as we ſuſpect to be weaker than the reſt; —— they're formed by two epaulments or demibaſtions, —— they are very pretty, and if you will take a walk, I'll engage to ſhew you one well worth your trouble. — I own, continued my uncle *Toby*, when we crown them, — they are much ſtronger, but then they are very expenſive, and take up a great deal of ground; ſo that, in my opinion, they are moſt of uſe to cover or defend the head of a camp; otherwiſe the double tenaille — By the mother who bore us! — brother *Toby*, quoth my father, not able to hold out any longer, — you would provoke a ſaint; — here have you got us, I know not how, not only ſouſe into the middle of the old ſubject again: —— But ſo full is your head of theſe confounded works, that tho' my wife is this moment in the pains of labour,—and you hear her cry out,—yet nothing will ſerve you but to carry off the man-midwife. —— *Accoucheur* — if you pleaſe, quoth Dr. *Slop*. — With all my heart, replied my father, I don't care what they call you, — but I wiſh the whole ſcience of fortification, with all its inventors, at the Devil; —

it

it has been the death of thouſands —— and it will be mine, in the end. — I would not, I would not, brother *Toby*, have my brains ſo full of ſaps, mines, blinds, gabions, paliſadoes, ravelins, half-moons, and ſuch trumpery, to be proprietor of *Namur*, and of all the towns in *Flanders* with it.

My uncle *Toby* was a man patient of injuries; — not from want of courage, — I have told you in the fifth chapter of this ſecond book, "That he was a man of courage:" — And will add here, that where juſt occaſions preſented, or called it forth, — I know no man under whoſe arm I would ſooner have taken ſhelter; nor did this ariſe from any inſenſibility or obtuſeneſs of his intellectual parts; for he felt this inſult of my father's as feelingly as a man could do; — but he was of a peaceful, placid nature, — no jarring element in it, — all was mixed up ſo kindly within him; my uncle *Toby* had ſcarce a heart to retaliate upon a fly.

—— Go, — ſays he one day at dinner, to an over-grown one which had buzzed about his noſe, and tormented him cruelly all dinner-time, and which, after infinite attempts, he had caught at laſt as it flew by him; —— Ill not hurt thee, ſays my uncle *Toby*, riſing from his chair, and going acroſs the room, with the fly in his hand, — I'll not hurt a hair of thy head: —Go, ſays he, lifting up the ſaſh, and opening his hand as he ſpoke, to let it eſcape; — go, poor Devil, get thee gone, why ſhould I hurt thee? —This world ſurely is wide enough to hold both thee and me.

I was but ten years old when this happened; —but whether it was, that the action itſelf was more

more in uniſon to my nerves at that age of pity, which inſtantly ſet my whole frame into one vibration of moſt pleaſurable ſenſation; — or how far the manner and expreſſion of it might go towards it; — or in what degree, or by what ſecret magic, — a tone of voice and harmony of movement, attuned by mercy, might find a paſſage to my heart, I know not; — this I know, that the leſſon of univerſal good-will then taught and imprinted by my uncle *Toby*, has never ſince been worn out of my mind: And tho' I would not depreciate what the ſtudy of the *Literæ Humaniores*, at the univerſity, have done for me in that reſpect, or diſcredit the other helps of an expenſive education beſtowed upon me, both at home and abroad ſince; — yet I often think that I owe one half of my philanthropy to that one accidental impreſſion.

☞ This is to ſerve for parents and governors inſtead of a whole volume upon the ſubject.

I could not give the reader this ſtroke in my uncle *Toby*'s picture, by the inſtrument with which I drew the other parts of it, — that taking in no more than the mere HOBBY-HORSICAL likeneſs; — this is a part of his moral character. My father, in this patient endurance of wrongs. which I mention was very different, as the reader muſt long ago have noted; he had a much more acute and quick ſenſibility of nature, attended with a little ſourneſs of temper; though this never tranſported him to any thing which looked like malignancy — yet, in the little rubs and vexations of life, 'twas apt to ſhew itſelf in a drolliſh and witty kind of peeviſhneſs: — He was, however, frank and generous in his nature, — at all times open to conviction; and

and in the little ebullitions of the ſubacid humour towards others, but particularly towards my uncle *Toby*, whom he truly loved;—he would feel more pain, ten times told, (except in the affair of my aunt *Dinah*, or where an hypotheſis was concerned) than what he ever gave.

The characters of the two brothers, in this view of them, reflected light upon each other, and appeared with great advantage in this affair which aroſe about *Stevinus*.

I need not tell the reader, if he keeps a HOBBY-HORSE,—that a man's HOBBY-HORSE is as tender a part as he has about him; and that theſe unprovoked ſtrokes, at my uncle *Toby*'s, could not be unfelt by him.—No;—as I ſaid above, my uncle *Toby* did feel them, and very ſenſibly too.

Pray, Sir, what ſaid he?—How did he behave?—Oh, Sir!—it was great: For as ſoon as my father had done inſulting his HOBBY-HORSE,—he turned his head, without the leaſt emotion, from Dr. *Slop*, to whom he was addreſſing his diſcourſe, and looked up into my father's face, with a countenance ſpread over with ſo much good nature;—ſo placid; ſo fraternal;—ſo inexpreſſibly tender towards him; it penetrated my father to his heart: He roſe up haſtily from his chair, and ſeizing hold of both my uncle *Toby*'s hands as he ſpoke:—Brother *Toby*, ſaid he,—I beg thy pardon;—forgive, I pray thee this raſh humour which my mother gave me.—My dear, dear brother, anſwered my uncle *Toby*, riſing up by my father's help, ſay no more about it;—you are heartily welcome, had it been ten times as much, brother. But 'tis ungenerous, replied my father, to hurt any man;

man; —a brother worſe; —but to hurt a brother of ſuch gentle manners, —ſo unprovoking, —and ſo unreſenting; —'tis baſe, —By heaven 'tis cowardly. — You are heartily welcome, brother, quoth my uncle *Toby*, — had it been fifty times as much. — Beſides, what have I to do, my dear *Toby*, cried my father, either with your amuſements or your pleaſures, unleſs it was in my power (which it is not) to encreaſe their meaſure?

— Brother *Shandy*, anſwered my uncle *Toby*, looking wiſtfully in his face, — you are much miſtaken in this point; — for you do increaſe my pleaſure very much, in begetting children for the *Shandy* Family at your time of life — But, by that, Sir, quoth Dr. *Slop*, Mr. *Shandy* encreaſes his own. — Not a jot, quoth my father.

CHAP. XIII.

MY brother does it, quoth my uncle *Toby*, out of *principle*. — In a family-way, I ſuppoſe, quoth Dr. *Slop*. — Pſhaw! — ſaid my father, — 'tis not worth talking of.

CHAP. XIV.

AT the end of the laſt chapter, my father and my uncle *Toby* were left both ſtanding like *Brutus* and *Caſſius* at the cloſe of the ſcene making up their accompts.

As my father ſpoke the three laſt words, —he ſat down: —my uncle *Toby* exactly followed his example, only, that before he took his chair, he

he rung the bell, to order Corporal *Trim*, who was in waiting, to ſtep home for *Stevinus*; — my uncle *Toby*'s houſe being no further off than the oppoſite ſide of the way.

Some men would have dropped the ſubject of *Stevinus*; — but my uncle *Toby* had no reſentment in his heart, and he went on with the ſubject, to ſhew my father that he had none.

Your ſudden appearance, Dr. *Slop*, quoth my uncle, reſuming the diſcourſe, inſtantly brought *Stevinus* into my head (My father, you may be ſure, did not offer to lay any more wagers upon *Stevinus*'s head) — becauſe, continued my uncle *Toby*, the celebrated ſailing chariot, which belonged to Prince *Maurice*, and was of ſuch wonderful contrivance and velocity, as to carry half a dozen people thirty *German* miles, in I don't know how few minutes, — was invented by *Stevinus*, that great mathematician and engineer.

You might have ſpared your ſervant the trouble, quoth Dr. *Slop*, (as the fellow is lame) of going for *Stevinus*'s account of it, becauſe, in my return from *Leyden* thro' the *Hague*, I walked as far as *Schevling*, which is two long miles, on purpoſe to take a view of it.

— That's nothing replied my uncle *Toby*, to what the learned *Peireſkius* did, who walked a matter of five hundred miles, reckoning from *Paris* to *Schevling*, and from *Schevling* to *Paris* back again, in order to ſee it, — and nothing elſe.

Some men cannot bear to be out-gone. The more fool *Peireſkius*, replied Dr. *Slop*. But mark, — 'twas out of no contempt of *Peireſkius* at all; — but that *Peireſkius*'s indefatigable labour in trudging ſo far on foot out of love for the ſciences, reduced the exploit of Dr. *Slop*, in

that

that affair, to nothing; — the more fool *Peireſkius*, ſaid he again: — Why ſo? — replied my father, taking his brother's part, not only to make reparation as faſt as he could for the inſult he had given him, which ſat ſtill upon my father's mind; — but partly, that my father began really to intereſt himſelf in the diſcourſe; — Why ſo? — ſaid he. Why is *Peireſkius*, or any man elſe, to be abuſed for an appetite for that, or any other morſel of ſound knowledge? For, notwithſtanding I know nothing of the chariot in queſtion, continued he, the inventor of it muſt have had a very mechanical head; and tho' I cannot gueſs upon what principles of philoſophy he has atchieved it; — yet certainly his machine has been conſtructed upon ſolid ones, be they what they will, or it could not have anſwered at the rate my brother mentions.

It anſwered, replied my uncle *Toby*, as well, if not better; for, as *Peireſkius* elegantly expreſſes it, ſpeaking of the velocity of its motion, *Tam citus erat, quam erat ventus*; which, unleſs I have forgot my Latin, is, that it was as ſwift as the wind itſelf.

But pray, Dr. *Slop*, quoth my father, interrupting my uncle, (tho' not without begging pardon for it, at the ſame time) upon what principles was this ſelf-ſame chariot ſet a-going? — Upon very pretty principles to be ſure, replied Dr. *Slop*; — and I have often wondered, continued he, evading the queſtion, why none of our gentry, who live upon large plains like this of ours, — (eſpecially they whoſe wives are not paſt child-bearing) attempt nothing of this kind; for it would not only be infinitely expeditious upon ſudden calls, to which the ſex is ſubject,

ject, — if the wind only ſerved, — but would be excellent good huſbandry to make uſe of the winds, which coſt nothing, and which eat nothing, rather than horſes, which (the Devil take 'em) both coſt and eat a great deal.

For that very reaſon, replied my father, "Becauſe they coſt nothing, and becauſe they eat "nothing,"—the ſcheme is bad;—it is the conſumption of our products, as well as the manufacture of them, which gives bread to the hungry, circulates trade, — brings in money, and ſupports the value of our lands: — and tho', I own, if I was a prince, I would generouſly recompence the ſcientifick head which brought forth ſuch contrivances; — yet I would as peremptorily ſuppreſs the uſe of them.

My father here had got into his element, — and was going on as proſperouſly with his diſſertation upon trade, as my uncle *Toby* had before upon his of fortification; —but, to the loſs of much ſound knowledge, the deſtinies in the morning had decreed that no diſſertation of any kind ſhould be ſpun by my father that day; — for as he opened his mouth to begin the next ſentence,

CHAP. XV.

IN popped corporal *Trim* with *Stevinus:* But 'twas too late, — all the diſcourſe had been exhauſted without him, and was running into a new channel.

—— You may take the book home again, *Trim*, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, nodding to him.

But pri'thee, Corporal, quoth my father, drolling,

drolling,—look firſt into it, and ſee if thou can'ſt ſpy aught of a ſailing chariot in it.

Corporal *Trim*, by being in the ſervice, had learned to obey,—and not to remonſtrate;—ſo taking the book to a ſide-table, and running over the leaves; an' pleaſe your honour, ſaid *Trim*, I can ſee no ſuch thing;—however, continued the Corporal, drolling a little in his turn, I'll make ſure work of it, an' pleaſe your Honour;—ſo taking hold of the two covers of the book, one in each hand, and letting the leaves fall down, as he bent the covers back, he gave the book a good ſound ſhake.

There is ſomething fallen out, however, ſaid *Trim*, an' pleaſe your honour; but it is not a chariot, or any thing like one:—— pri'thee Corporal, ſaid my father, ſmiling, what is it then?——I think, anſwered *Trim*, ſtooping to take it up,—'tis more like a ſermon,—for it begins, with a text of ſcripture, and the chapter and verſe;—and then goes on, not as a chariot,—but like a ſermon directly.

The company ſmiled.

I cannot conceive how it is poſſible, quoth my uncle *Toby*, for ſuch a thing as a ſermon to have got into my *Stevinus*.

I think 'tis a ſermon, replied *Trim*;—but if it pleaſe your Honours, as it is a fair hand, I will read you a page:—for *Trim*, you muſt know, loved to hear himſelf read almoſt as well as talk.

I have ever a ſtrong propenſity, ſaid my father, to look into things which croſs my way, by ſuch ſtrange fatalities as theſe;—and as we have nothing better to do, at leaſt till *Obadiah* gets back, I ſhould be obliged to you, brother,

if

if Dr. *Slop* has no objection to it, to order the Corporal to give us a page or two of it, — if he is as able to do it, as he ſeems willing. An' pleaſe your Honour, quoth *Trim*, I officiated two whole campaigns in *Flanders*, as Clerk to the Chaplain of the regiment. — He can read it, quoth my uncle *Toby*, as well as I can. —— *Trim*, I aſſure you, was the beſt ſcholar in my company, and ſhould have had the next halberd, but for the poor fellow's misfortune. Corporal *Trim* laid his hand upon his heart, and made an humble bow to his Maſter; — then laying down his hat upon the floor, and taking up the ſermon in his left hand, in order to have his right at liberty, — he advanced, nothing doubting, into the middle of the room, where he could beſt ſee, and be beſt ſeen by, his audience.

CHAP. XVI.

——— If you have any objection, — ſaid my father, addreſſing himſelf to Dr. *Slop*: Not in the leaſt, replied Dr. *Slop*; — for it does not appear on which ſide of the queſtion it is wrote; — it may be a compoſition of a divine of our church, as well as yours, — ſo that we run equal riſks. — 'Tis wrote upon neither ſide, quoth *Trim*, for 'tis only upon *Conſcience*, an' pleaſe your Honours.

Trim's reaſon put his audience into good humour — all but Dr. *Slop*, who turning his head about towards *Trim*, looked a little angry.

Begin, *Trim*, — and read diſtinctly, quoth my father; — I will, an' pleaſe your Honour, replied

replied the Corporal, making a bow, and beſpeaking attention with a ſlight movement of his right hand.

CHAP. XVII.

——— But before the Corporal begins, I muſt firſt give you a deſcription of his attitude; — otherwiſe he will naturally ſtand repreſented, by your imagination, in an uneaſy poſture,—ſtiff—perpendicular,—dividing the weight of his body equally upon both legs;—his eyes fixed, as if on duty?—his look determined,——clinching the ſermon in his left hand, like his firelock:—In a word, you would be apt to paint *Trim*, as if he was ſtanding in his platoon ready for action:—His attitude was as unlike all this as you can conceive.

He ſtood before them with his body ſwayed, and bent forwards juſt ſo far, as to make an angle of 85 degrees and a half upon the plain of the horizon;—which ſound orators, to whom I addreſs this, know very well, to be the true perſuaſive angle of incidence;—in any other angle you may talk and preach;—'tis certain,—and it is done every day;—but with what effect,—I leave the world to judge.

The neceſſity of this preciſe angle of 85 degrees and a half to a mathematical exactneſs,—does it not ſhew us, by the way,—how the arts and ſciences mutually befriend each other?

How the duce Corporal *Trim*, who knew not ſo much as an acute angle from an obtuſe one, came to hit it ſo exactly;—or whether it was chance, or nature, or good ſenſe, or imitation, &c.

&c. ſhall be commented upon in that part of this cyclopædia of arts and ſciences, where the inſtrumental parts of the eloquence of the ſenate, the pulpit, the bar, the coffee-houſe, the bed-chamber, and fire-ſide, fall under conſideration.

He ſtood,—for I repeat it, to take the picture of him in at one view, with his body ſwayed, and ſomewhat bent forwards,— his right leg firm under him, ſuſtaining ſeven-eighths of his whole weight,—the foot of his left leg, the defect of which was no diſadvantage to his attitude, advanced a little,—not laterally, nor forwards, but in a line betwixt them;—his knee bent, but that not violently,—but ſo as to fall within the limits of the line of beauty;—and I add, of the line of ſcience too;—for conſider, it had one eighth part of his body to bear up;—ſo that in this caſe the poſition of the leg is determined,—becauſe the foot could be no further advanced, or the knee more bent, than what would allow him, mechanically, to receive an eighth part of his whole weight under it,—and to carry it too.

——— This I recommend to painters;—need I add,—to orators?—I think not; for unleſs they practice it,—they muſt fall upon their noſes.

So much for corporal *Trim*'s body and legs.—He held the ſermon looſely,—not careleſsly, in his left hand, raiſed ſomething above his ſtomach, and detached a little from his breaſt;—his right arm falling negligently by his ſide, as nature and the laws of gravity ordered it,—but with the palm of it open and turned towards his

Frontiſpiece Vol . I . p. 144

Hogart del . *Byrne Sculpt .*

BRITISH
21 AU 69
MUSEUM

his audience, ready to aid the ſentiment, in caſe it ſtood in need.

Corporal *Trim*'s eyes and the muſcles of his face were in full harmony with the other parts of him; —— he looked frank, — unconſtrained, — ſomething aſſured, — but not bordering upon aſſurance.

Let not the critic aſk how Corporal *Trim* could come by all this; I've told him it ſhall be explained; — but ſo he ſtood before my father, my uncle *Toby*, and Dr. *Slop*. — ſo ſwayed his body, ſo contraſted his limbs, and with ſuch an oratorical ſweep throughout the whole figure, a ſtatuary might have modelled from it;— nay, I doubt whether the oldeſt Fellow of a College, — or the *Hebrew* Profeſſor himſelf, could have much mended it.

Trim made a bow, and read as follows:

The SERMON.

HEBREWS xiii. 18.

——*For we* truſt *we have a good Conſcience.*—

"TRuſt!——Truſt we have a good Con-
" ſcience!"

[Certainly *Trim*, quoth my father, interrupting him, you give that ſentence a very improper accent; for you curl up your noſe, man, and read it with ſuch a ſneering tone, as if the Parſon was going to abuſe the Apoſtle.

He is, an' pleaſe your Honour, replied *Trim*.

Pugh! ſaid my father, ſmiling.

Sir, quoth Dr. *Slop*, *Trim* is certainly in the

right; for the writer, (who I perceive is a Proteſtant) by the ſnappiſh manner in which he takes up the Apoſtle, is certainly going to abuſe him,—if this treatment of him has not done it already. But from whence, replied my father, have you concluded ſo ſoon, Dr. *Slop*, that the writer is of our Church?—for aught I can ſee yet—he may be of any church:—Becauſe, anſwered Dr. *Slop*, if he was of ours, he durſt no more take ſuch a licence,—than a bear by his beard:—If, in our communion, Sir, a man was to inſult an apoſtle,—a ſaint,—or even the paring of a ſaint's nail,—he would have his eyes ſcratched out,—What, by the ſaint? quoth my uncle *Toby*. No; replied Dr. *Slop*.—he would have an old houſe over his head. Pray is the Inquiſition an antient building, anſwered my uncle *Toby*, or is it a modern one?—I know nothing of architecture, replied Dr. *Slop*.——An' pleaſe your Honours, quoth *Trim*, the Inquiſition is the vileſt—Prithee ſpare thy deſcription, *Trim*, I hate the very name of it, ſaid my father.—No matter for that, anſwered Dr. *Slop*,—it has its uſes; for tho' I am no advocate for it, yet in ſuch caſes as this, he would ſoon be taught better manners; and I can tell him, if he went on at that rate, would be flung into the Inquiſition for his pains. God help him then, quoth my uncle *Toby*. Amen, added *Trim*; for, heaven above knows, I have a poor brother who has been fourteen years a captive in it.—I never heard one word of it before, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, haſtily:—How came he there, *Trim?*—O, Sir! the ſtory will make your heart bleed,—as it has made mine a thouſand times;—but it is too long to be told now;—your Honour ſhall hear

it

it from firſt to laſt ſome day when I am working beſide you in our fortification;—but the ſhort of the ſtory is this:— That my brother *Tom* went over a ſervant to *Liſbon*,— and then married a *Jew*'s widow, who kept a ſmall ſhop and ſold ſauſages, which, ſome how or other, was the cauſe of his being taken in the middle of the night out of his bed, where he was lying with his wife and two ſmall children, and carried directly to the Inquiſition; where, God help him, continued *Trim*, fetching a ſigh from the bottom of his heart,— the poor honeſt lad lies confined at this hour;—— he was as honeſt a ſoul, added *Trim*, (pulling out his handkerchief) as ever blood warmed.——

——— The tears trickled down *Trim*'s cheeks faſter than he could well wipe them away:——— A dead ſilence in the room enſued for ſome minutes.—Certain proof of pity!—

Come, *Trim*, quoth my father, after he ſaw the poor fellow's grief had got a little vent,— read on,— and put this melancholy ſtory out of thy head:— I grieve that I interrupted thee;— but prithee begin the ſermon again;— for if the firſt ſentence in it is matter of abuſe, as thou ſayeſt, I have a great deſire to know what kind of provocation the Apoſtle has given.

Corporal *Trim* wiped his face, and returning his handkerchief into his pocket, and making a bow as he did it,— he began again.]

The SERMON.

HEBREWS xiii. 18.

——*For we* truſt *we have a good conſcience.* —

"TRuſt! truſt we have a good conſcience! "Surely if there is any thing in this life "which a man may depend upon, and to the "knowledge of which he is capable of arriving "upon the moſt indiſputable evidence, it muſt "be this very thing, — whether he has a good "conſcience or no."

[I am poſitive I am right, quoth Dr. *Slop.*]

"If a man thinks at all, he cannot well be a "ſtranger to the true ſtate of this account; — he "muſt be privy to his own thoughts and deſires; "— he muſt remember his paſt purſuits, and "know certainly the true ſprings and motives "which, in general, have governed the actions "of his life."

[I defy him, without an aſſiſtant, quoth Dr. *Slop.*]

"In other matters we may be deceived by "falſe appearances; and as the Wiſe Man com- "plains, *hardly do we gueſs aright at the things "that are upon the earth, and with labour do we "find the things that are before us.* But here "the mind has all the evidence and facts within "herſelf; — is conſcious of the web ſhe has "wove; — knows its texture and fineneſs, and "the exact ſhare which every paſſion has had in "working upon the ſeveral deſigns which virtue "or vice has planned before her."

[The

[The language is good, and I declare *Trim* reads very well, quoth my father.]

" Now, — as conſcience is nothing elſe but " the knowledge which the mind has within " herſelf of this; and the judgment, either of " approbation or cenſure, which it unavoidably " makes upon the ſucceſſive actions of our lives; " 'tis plain you will ſay, from the very terms of " the propoſition, — whenever this inward teſti- " mony goes againſt a man, and he ſtands ſelf " accuſed,—that he muſt neceſſarily be a guilty " man. — And, on the contrary, when the re- " port is favourable on his ſide, and his heart " condemns him not; — that it is not a matter " of *truſt*, as the Apoſtle intimates,—but a mat- " ter of *certainty* and fact, that the conſcience " is good, and that the man muſt be good alſo."

[Then the Apoſtle is altogether in the wrong, I ſuppoſe, quoth Dr. *Slop*, and the Proteſtant divine is in the right. Sir, have patience, replied my father, for I think it will preſently appear that St. *Paul* and the Proteſtant divine are both of an opinion. — As nearly ſo, quoth Dr. *Slop*, as Eaſt is to Weſt; — but this, continued he, lifting both hands, comes from the liberty of the preſs.

It is no more, at the worſt, replied my uncle *Toby*, than the liberty of the pulpit; for it does not appear that the Sermon is printed, or ever like to be.

Go on, *Trim*, quoth my father.]

" At firſt ſight this may ſeem to be a true " ſtate of the caſe; and I make no doubt but " the knowledge of right and wrong is ſo truly " impreſſed upon the mind of man, — that did " no ſuch thing ever happen, as that the con-

" ſcience of a man, by long habits of ſin,
" might (as the ſcripture aſſures it may) inſen-
" ſibly become hard; — and, like ſome tender
" parts of his body, by much ſtreſs and con-
" tinul hard uſage, loſe, by degrees, that nice
" ſenſe and perception with which God and na-
" ture endowed it. Did this never happen; —
" or was it certain that ſelf-love could never
" hang the leaſt bias upon the judgment; —
" or that the little intereſts below, could riſe
" and perplex the faculties of our upper re-
" gions, and encompaſs them about with clouds
" and thick darkneſs: —— Could no ſuch
" thing as favour and affection enter this ſacred
" COURT: —— Did WIT diſdain to take a
" bribe in it;—or was aſhamed to ſhew its face
" as an advocate for an unwarrantable enjoy-
" ment. — Or, laſtly, were we aſſured, that
" INTEREST ſtood always unconcerned whilſt
" the cauſe was hearing, — and that paſſion ne-
" ver got into the judgment-ſeat, and pro-
" nounced ſentence in the ſtead of reaſon,
" which is ſuppoſed always to preſide and deter-
" mine upon the caſe. —— Was this truly ſo,
" as the objection muſt ſuppoſe; — no doubt
" then, the religious and moral ſtate of a man
" would be exactly what he himſelf eſteemed
" it; —— and the guilt or innocence of every
" man's life could be known, in general, by no
" better meaſure, than the degrees of his own
" approbation and cenſure.

" I own, in one caſe, whenever a man's
" conſcience does accuſe him, (as it ſeldom
" errs on that ſide) that he is guilty; and, un-
" leſs in melancholy and hypochondriac caſes,
" we may ſafely pronounce upon it, that there

" are

" are always ſufficient grounds for the accuſa-
" tion."

" But the converſe of the propoſition will
" not hold true;——namely, that whenever
" there is a guilt the conſcience muſt accuſe;
" and if it does not, that a man is therefore in-
" nocent.—— This is not fact:—ſo that the
" common conſolation which ſome good chriſ-
" tian or other, is hourly adminiſtering to him-
" ſelf—that he thanks God his mind does not
" miſgive him; and that, conſequently he has
" a good conſcience, becauſe he has a quiet
" one,—is fallacious;—and as current as the
" inference is, and as infallible as the rule ap-
" pears at firſt ſight, yet, when you look near-
" er to it, and try the truth of this rule upon
" plain facts,—you ſee it liable to ſo much
" error from a falſe application;—the princi-
" ple upon which it goes ſo often perverted;—
" the whole force of it loſt, and ſometimes ſo
" vilely caſt away, that it is painful to produce
" the common examples from human life which
" confirm the account.

" A man ſhall be vicious and utterly de-
" bauched in his principles;—exceptionable
" in his conduct to the world; ſhall live
" ſhameleſs, in the open commiſſion of a ſin
" which no reaſon or pretence can juſtify;—a
" ſin, by which contrary to all the workings
" of humanity, he ſhall ruin for ever the de-
" luded partner of his guilt;—rob her of her
" beſt dowry; and not only cover her own
" head with diſhonour—but involve a whole
" virtuous family in ſhame and ſorrow for her
" ſake.—Surely, you will think conſcience
" muſt lead ſuch a man a troubleſome life;—

" he can have no reſt night or day from its re-
proaches.

" Alas! CONSCIENCE had ſomething elſe
" to do, all this time, than to break in upon him;
" as *Elijah* reproached the God *Baal*, — this
" domeſtic God *was either talking, or purſuing,*
" *or was in a journey, or peradventure he ſlept*
" *and could not be awoke.*

" Perhaps HE was gone out in company with
" HONOUR to fight a duel; — to pay off ſome
" debt at play; — or dirty annuity, the bargain
" of his luſt: Perhaps CONSCIENCE all this
" time was engaged at home talking loud a-
" gainſt petty larceny, and executing vengeance
" upon ſome ſuch puny crimes as his fortune
" and rank in life ſecured him againſt all temp-
" tation of committing; ſo that he lives as mer-
" rily" [if he was of our church, tho', quoth Dr. *Slop*, he could not]—" ſleeps as ſoundly in
" his bed; — and at laſt meets death as uncon-
" cernedly; — perhaps much more ſo than a
" much better man."

[All this is impoſſible with us, quoth Dr. *Slop*, turning to my father, — the caſe could not happen in our Church. —— It happens in ours, however, replied my father, but too often. — I own, quoth Dr. *Slop*, (ſtruck a little with my father's frank acknowledgment)—that a man in the *Romiſh* Church may live as badly; — but then he cannot eaſily die ſo. —— 'Tis little matter, replied my father, with an air of indifference, — how a raſcal dies. —— I mean, anſwered Dr. *Slop*, he would be denied the benefits of the laſt ſacraments —— Pray how many have you in all, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, — for I always forget? —— Seven, anſwered Dr. *Slop*. ——

Humph!

Humph! — ſaid my uncle *Toby*, — tho' not accented as a note of acquieſcence, — but as an interjection of that particular ſpecies of ſurprize, when a man, in looking into a drawer, finds more of a thing than he expected.— Humph! replied my uncle *Toby*. Dr. *Slop*, who had an ear, underſtood my uncle *Toby* as well as if he had wrote a whole volume againſt the ſeven ſacraments. —— Humph! replied Dr. *Slop*, (ſtating my uncle *Toby*'s argument over again to him)— Why, Sir, are there not ſeven cardinal virtues? — Seven mortal ſins? — Seven Golden candleſticks? — Seven heavens? — 'Tis more than I know, replied my uncle *Toby* —— Are there not ſeven wonders of the world? — Seven days of the creation?— Seven planets? — Seven plagues? —— That there are, quoth my father, with a moſt affected gravity. But prithee, continued he, go on with the reſt of thy characters, *Trim*.]

" Another is ſordid, unmerciful, (here *Trim* " waved his right hand) a ſtrait-hearted, ſelfiſh " wretch incapable, either of private friendſhip " or public ſpirit. Take notice how he paſſes " by the widow and orphan in their diſtreſs, " and ſees all the miſeries incident to human " life without a ſigh or a prayer." [And pleaſe your Honours, cried *Trim*, I think this is a viler man than the other.]

" Shall not conſcience riſe up and ſting him " on ſuch occaſions? No; thank God there " is no occaſion; *I pay every man his own*; — *I* " *have no fornication to anſwer to my conſcience* " *— no faithleſs vows or promiſes to make up*; — " *I have debauched no man's wife or child: thank* " *God, I am not as other men, adulterers, un-*

" *juſt, or even as this libertine, who ſtands be-*
" *fore me.*

" A third is crafty and deſigning in his na-
" ture. View his whole life; — 'tis nothing but
" a cunning contexture of dark arts and unequi-
" table ſubterfuges, baſely to defeat the true in-
" tent of all laws, — plain dealing and the ſafe
" enjoyment of our ſeveral properties — You
" will ſee ſuch a one working out a frame of lit-
" tle deſigns upon the ignorance and perplexi-
" ties of the poor and needy man; — ſhall raiſe
" a fortune upon the inexperience of a youth
" or the unſuſpecting temper of his friend who
" would have truſted him with his life.

" When old age comes on, and repentance
" calls him to look back upon this black ac-
" count, and ſtate it over again with his con-
" ſcience, — CONSCIENCE looks into the STA-
" TUTES at LARGE; — finds no expreſs law
" broken by what he has done; perceives no
" penalty or forfeiture of goods and chattels in-
" curred; — ſees no ſcourge waving over his
" head, or priſon opening its gates upon him:
" —— What is there to affright his conſci-
" ence? ——— Conſcience has got ſafely en-
" trenched behind the Letter of the Law:
" ſits there invulnerable, fortified with CASES
" and REPORTS ſo ſtrongly on all ſides, —
" that it is not preaching can diſpoſſeſs it of
" its hold."

[Here Corporal *Trim* and my uncle *Toby* ex-changed looks with each other ——— Aye, — aye, *Trim*! quoth my uncle *Toby*, ſhaking his head, — theſe are but ſorry fortifications, *Trim*. —— O! very poor work, anſwered *Trim*, to what your Honour and I make of it. —— The character

character of this laſt man, ſaid Dr. *Slop*, interrupting *Trim*, is more deteſtable than all the reſt, —and ſeems to have been taken from ſome pettifogging Lawyer amongſt you: —— Amongſt us a man's conſcience could not poſſibly continue ſo long *blinded*; — three times in a year, at leaſt, he muſt go to confeſſion. Will that reſtore it to ſight, quoth my uncle *Toby?* — Go on, *Trim*, quoth my father, or *Obadiah* will have got back before thou haſt got to the end of thy ſermon;—'tis a very ſhort one, replied *Trim* —I wiſh it was longer, quoth my uncle *Toby*, for I like it hugely. — *Trim* went on.]

"A fourth man ſhall want even this refuge; "—ſhall break through all this ceremony of "ſlow chicane; — ſcorns the doubtful workings "of ſecret plots and cautious trains to bring a-"bout his purpoſe: — ſee the barefaced vil-"lain, how he cheats, lies, perjures, robs, "murders — Horrid! —— But indeed much "better was not to be expected, in the preſent "caſe, — the poor man was in the dark! — his "prieſt had got the keeping of his conſcience; "—and all he would let him know of it, was, "That he muſt believe in the Pope;—go to "Maſs;—croſs himſelf;—tell his beads;—be a "good catholic, and that this, in all con-"ſcience, was enough to carry him to heaven. "What —— if he perjures! ——— Why; "—he had a mental reſervation in it.——— "But if he is ſo wicked and abandoned a wretch "as you repreſent him;—if he robs,—if he "ſtabs,—will not conſcience, on every ſuch act "receive a wound itſelf? Aye,—but the man "has carried it to confeſſion?—the wound di-"geſts there, and will do well enough, and in

"a ſhort

" a ſhort time be quite healed up by abſolution.
" O Popery! what haſt thou to anſwer for? —
" when, not content with the too many natu-
" ral and fatal ways, thro' which the heart of
" man is every day thus treacherous to itſelf a-
" bove all things; — thou haſt wilfully ſet o-
" pen this wide gate of deceit before the face of
" this unwary traveller, too apt, God knows,
" to go aſtray of himſelf; and confidently ſpeak
" peace to himſelf, when there is no peace.

" Of this the common inſtances which I
" have drawn out of life, are too notorious to
" require much evidence. If any man doubts
" the reality of them, or thinks it impoſſible
" for a man to be ſuch a bubble to himſelf, — I
" muſt refer him a moment to his own reflec-
" tions, and will then venture to truſt my ap-
" peal with his own heart.

" Let him conſider in how different a degree
" of deteſtation, numbers of wicked actions
" ſtand *there*, tho' equally bad and vicious in
" their own natures; — he will ſoon find that
" ſuch of them, as ſtrong inclination and cuſ-
" tom have prompted him to commit, are ge-
" nerally dreſſed out and painted with all the
" falſe beauties, which a ſoft and flattering
" hand can give them: — and that the others,
" to which he feels no propenſity, appear, at
" once, naked and deformed, ſurrounded with
" all the true circumſtances of folly and diſho-
" nour.

" When *David* ſurprized *Saul* ſleeping in the
" Cave, and cut off the ſkirt of his robe, — we
" read his heart ſmote him for what he had
" done: —— But in the matter of *Uriah*,
" where a faithful and gallant ſervant, whom

" he

" he ought to have loved and honoured, fell to
" make way for his luſt,— where conſcience had
" ſo much greater reaſon to take the alarm,
" his heart ſmote him not. A whole year had
" almoſt paſſed from the firſt commiſſion of
" that crime, to the time *Nathan* was ſent to
" reprove him; and we read not once of the
" leaſt ſorrow or compunction of heart which he
" teſtified, during all that time, for what he
" had done.

" Thus conſcience, this once able monitor
" — placed on high as a judge within us, and
" intended by our maker as a juſt and equitable
" one too, — by an unhappy train of cauſes and
" impediments takes often ſuch imperfect cog-
" nizance of what paſſes, — does its office ſo ne-
" gligently, — ſometimes ſo corruptly, — that it
" is not to be truſted alone; and therefore we
" find there is a neceſſity, an abſolute neceſſity
" of joining another principle with it to aid, if
" not govern, its determinations.

" So that if you would form a juſt judgment
" of what is of infinite importance to you not
" to be miſled in, — namely, in what degree of
" real merit you ſtand either as an honeſt man,
" an uſeful citizen, a faithful ſubject to your
" King, or a good ſervant to your God, ——
" call in religion and morality. —— Look,
" — What is written in the law of God?
" ——— How readeſt thou? ——— Con-
" ſult calm reaſon and the unchangeable obli-
" gations of juſtice and truth; — what ſay
" they?

" Let CONSCIENCE determine the matter up-
" on theſe reports; — and then if thy heart con-
" demns thee not, which is the caſe the Apoſtle
" ſuppoſes,

" ſuppoſes,—the rule will be infallible, (here " Dr. *Slop* fell aſleep) *thou wilt have confidence* " *towards God*;—that is, have juſt grounds to " believe the judgment thou haſt paſt upon thy- " ſelf, is the judgment of God; and nothing " elſe but an anticipation of that righteous ſen- " tence which will be pronounced upon thee " hereafter by that being, to whom thou art fi- " nally to give an account of thy actions.

" *Bleſſed is the man*, indeed then, as the au- " thor of the book of *Eccleſiaſticus* expreſſes it " *who is not pricked with the multitude of his* " *ſins: Bleſſed is the man whoſe heart hath not* " *condemned him*; *whether he be rich*, *or whe-* " *ther he be poor*, *if he have a good heart*, (a " heart thus guided and informed) *he ſhall at* " *all times rejoice in a chearful countenance*; *his* " *mind ſhall tell him more than ſeven watch-men* " *that ſit above upon a tower on high*——

[A tower has no ſtrength, quoth my uncle *Toby*, unleſs 'tis flanked] " In the darkeſt doubts it " ſhall conduct him ſafer than a thouſand caſu- " iſts, and give the ſtate he lives in a better " ſecurity for his behaviour than all the clauſes " and reſtrictions put together, which law-ma- " kers are forced to multiply:—*Forced*, I ſay, " as things ſtand; human laws not being a " matter of original choice, but of pure neceſſi- " ty, brought in to fence againſt the miſchievous " effects of thoſe conſciences which are no law " unto themſelves; well intending, by the ma- " ny proviſions made,—that in all ſuch corrupt " and miſguided caſes where principles and the " checks of conſcience will not make us upright " —to ſupply their force, and, by the terrors of " gaols and halters, oblige us to it."

[I ſee

[I ſee plainly, ſaid my father, that this ſermon has been compoſed to be preached at the Temple,—or at ſome Aſſize.——I like the reaſoning,—and am ſorry that Dr. *Slop* has fallen aſleep before the time of his conviction;—for it is now clear, that the parſon, as I thought at firſt, never inſulted St. *Paul* in the leaſt;—nor has there been, brother, the leaſt difference between them.—A great matter, if they had differed, replied my uncle *Toby*,—the beſt friends in the world may differ ſometimes.—True—brother *Toby*, quoth my father, ſhaking hands with him,—we'll fill our pipes, brother, and then *Trim* ſhall go on.

Well what do'ſt thou think of it? ſaid my father, ſpeaking to Corporal *Trim*, as he reached his tobacco-box.

I think, anſwered the Corporal, that the ſeven watch-men upon the tower, who, I ſuppoſe are all centinels there,—are more, an' pleaſe your honour, than were neceſſary;—and, to go on at that rate, would haraſs a regiment all to pieces, which a commanding officer, who loves his men, will never do, if he can help it; becauſe two centinels, added the Corporal, are as good as twenty.——I have been a commanding officer myſelf in the *Corps de Garde* a hundred times, continued *Trim*, riſing an inch higher in his figure, as he ſpoke,—and all the time I had the honour to ſerve his majeſty King *William*, in relieving the moſt conſiderable poſts, I never left more than two in my life.——Very right, *Trim*, quoth my uncle *Toby*;—but you do not conſider, *Trim*, that the towers, in *Solomon*'s days, were not ſuch things as our baſtions, flanked and defended by other works;—

this,

this, *Trim*, was an invention ſince *Solomon*'s death; nor had they horn-works, or ravelins before the curtin, in his time; — or ſuch a foſſé as we make with a cuvette in the middle of it, and with covered-ways and counterſcarps paliſadoed along it, to guard againſt a *Coup de main*; — So that the ſeven men upon the tower were a party, I dare ſay, from the *Corps de Garde*, ſet there, not only to look out, but to defend it. — They could be no more, an' pleaſe your Honour, than a Corporal's Guard. —— My father ſmiled inwardly, — but not outwardly; — the ſubject between my uncle *Toby* and Corporal *Trim* being rather too ſerious, conſidering what had happened, to make a jeſt of: ——— So putting his pipe into his mouth, which he had juſt lighted, — he contented himſelf with ordering *Trim* to read on. He read on as follows:]

"To have the fear of God before our eyes, "and, in our mutual dealings with each other, "to govern our actions by the eternal meaſures "of right and wrong: — The firſt of theſe "will comprehend the duties of religion; —— "the ſecond, thoſe of morality, which are ſo "inſeparably connected together, that you can- "not divide theſe two *tables*, even in imagina- "tion, (tho' the attempt is often made in prac- "tice) without breaking and mutually deſtroy- "ing them both.

"I ſaid the attempt is often made, and ſo it "is; — there being nothing more common "than to ſee a man who has no ſenſe at all of "religion, — and indeed has ſo much honeſty as "to pretend to none, who would take it as the "bittereſt affront, ſhould you but hint at a ſuſ-

"picion

" picion of his moral character, —or imagine
" he was not conſcientiouſly juſt and ſcrupulous
" to the uttermoſt mite.

" When there is ſome appearance that it is
" ſo, — tho' one is unwilling even to ſuſpect the
" appearance of ſo amiable a virtue as moral
" honeſty, yet were we to look into the grounds
" of it, in the preſent caſe, I am perſuaded we
" ſhould find little reaſon to envy ſuch a one the
" honour of his motive.

" Let him declaim as pompouſly as he choo-
" ſes upon the ſubject, it will be found to reſt
" upon no better foundation than either his in-
" tereſt, his pride his eaſe, or ſome little and
" changeable paſſion as will give us but ſmall
" dependence upon his actions in matters of
" great ſtreſs.

" I will illuſtrate this by an example.

" I know the banker I deal with, or the phy-
" ſician I uſually call in [there is no need,
cried Dr. *Slop*, (waking) to call in any phyſician
in this caſe] to be neither of them men of much
" religion: I hear them make a jeſt of it every
" day, and treat all its ſanctions with ſo much
" ſcorn, as to put the matter paſt doubt.
" Well? —notwithſtanding this, I put my
" fortune into the hands of the one; — and,
" what is dearer ſtill to me, I truſt my life to
" the honeſt ſkill of the other.

" Now let me examine what is my reaſon
" for this great confidence. — Why, in the firſt
" place, I believe there is no probability that ei-
" ther of them will employ the power I put in-
" to their hands to my diſadvantage; — I conſi-
" der that honeſty ſerves the purpoſes of this
" life: —— I know their ſucceſs in the world

" depends

" depends upon the fairneſs of their characters.
" ——— In a word,— I'm perſuaded that
" they cannot hurt me, without hurting them-
" ſelves more.

" But put it otherwiſe, namely, that intereſt
" lay, for once, on the other ſide; that a caſe
" ſhould happen, wherein the one, without
" ſtain to his reputation, could ſecrete my for-
" tune, and leave me naked to the world; — or
" that the other could ſend me out of it, and
" enjoy an eſtate by my death, without diſho-
" nour to himſelf or his art: ——— In this
" caſe, what hold have I of either of them? —
" Religion, the ſtrongeſt of all motives, is out
" of the queſtion: — Intereſt, the next moſt
" powerful motive in the world, is ſtrongly a-
" gainſt me: — What have I left to caſt into the
" oppoſite ſcale to balance this temptation? —
" Alas! I have nothing, — nothing but what is
" lighter than a bubble. — I muſt lay at the
" mercy of HONOUR, or ſome ſuch capricious
" principle. — Strait ſecurity for two of my moſt
" valuable bleſſings! — my property and my
" life.

" As, therefore, we can have no dependance
" upon morality without religion; — ſo, on the
" other hand, there is nothing better to be ex-
" pected from religion without morality; — ne-
" verthelefs, 'tis no prodigy to ſee a man whoſe
" real moral character ſtands very low, who yet
" entertains the higheſt notion of himſelf, in the
" light of a religious man.

" He ſhall not only be covetous, revengeful,
" implacable, — but even wanting in points of
" common honeſty; yet, inaſmuch as he talks
" aloud againſt the infidelity of the age, — is

" zealous

" zealous for ſome points of religion, — goes " twice a day to church, attends the ſacraments, " and amuſes himſelf with a few inſtrumental " parts of religion, — ſhall cheat his conſcience " into a judgment that, for this, he is a religi- " ous man, and has diſcharged truly his duty to " God: And you will find that ſuch a man, " thro' force of this deluſion, generally looks " down with ſpiritual pride upon every other " man who has leſs affectation of piety, — tho', " perhaps, ten times more moral honeſty than " himſelf.

" *This likewiſe is a ſore evil under the ſun*; " and I believe there is no one miſtaken princi- " ple, which, for its time, has wrought more " ſerious miſchiefs. — for a general proof of " this, — examine the hiſtory of the *Romiſh* " Church; — [Well, what can you make of " that, cried Dr. *Slop?*] — ſee what ſcenes of " cruelty, murders, rapines, blood-ſhed, [They may thank their own obſtinacy, cried Dr. " *Slop*] have all been ſanctified by a religion not " ſtrictly governed by morality.

" In how many kingdoms of the world, — [Here *Trim* kept waving his right hand from the ſermon to the extent of his arm, returning it backwards and forwards to the concluſion of the paragraph.]

" In how many kingdoms of the world has " the cruſading ſword of this miſguided ſaint-er- " rant ſpared neither age, or merit, or ſex, or " condition? — and, as he fought under the " banners of a religion which ſet him looſe from " juſtice and humanity, he ſhewed none; mer- " cileſsly trampled upon both, — heard neither

" the

" the cries of the unfortunate, nor pitied their
" diſtreſſes."

[I have been in many a battle, an' pleaſe your honour, quoth *Trim*, ſighing, but never in ſo melancholy a one as this. — I would not have drawn a trigger in it, againſt theſe poor ſouls, — to have been made a general officer. — Why, what do you underſtand of the affair; ſaid Dr. *Slop*, looking towards *Trim* with ſomething more contempt than the Corporal's honeſt heart deſerved. —— What do you know, friend, about this battle you talk of? ——— I know, replied *Trim*, that I never refuſed quarter in my life to any man who cried out for it; — but to a woman or a child, continued *Trim*, before I would level my muſket at them, I would loſe my life a thouſand times. —— Here's a crown for thee, *Trim*, to drink with *Obadiah* to night, quoth my uncle *Toby*, and I'll give *Obadiah* another too. — God bleſs your honour, replied *Trim*, — I had rather theſe poor women and children had it. —— Thou art an honeſt fellow quoth my uncle *Toby*. — My father nodded his head, — as much as to ſay, — and ſo he is. —

But prithee, *Trim*, ſaid my father, make an end, — for I ſee thou haſt but a leaf or two left.]

Corporal *Trim* read on.

" If the teſtimony of paſt centuries in this
" matter is not ſufficient, — conſider, at this in-
" ſtant how the votaries of that religion are e-
" very day thinking to do ſervice and honour to
" God, by actions which are a diſhonour and
" ſcandal to themſelves.

" To be convinced of this, go with me for a
" moment into the priſons of the inquiſition.

[God

[God help my poor brother *Tom*] —— Be- " hold *Religion*, with *Mercy* and *Juſtice* chain- " ed down under her feet, —— there ſitting " ghaſtly upon a black tribunal, propped up " with racks and inſtruments of torment. " Hark! —— hark! what a piteous groan! [Here *Trim*'s face turned as pale as aſhes] See " the melancholy wretch who uttered it — [Here the tears began to trickle down] juſt " brought forth to undergo the anguiſh of a " mock trial, and endure the utmoſt pains that " a ſtudied ſyſtem of cruelty has been able to " invent. —— [D--n them all, quoth *Trim*, his colour returning into his face as red as blood] " — Behold this helpleſs victim delivered up " to his tormentors, — his body ſo waſted with " ſorrow and confinement —— [Oh! 'tis my brother, cried poor *Trim* in a moſt paſſion- ate exclamation, dropping his ſermon upon the ground, and clapping his hands together — I fear 'tis poor *Tom*. My father's and my uncle *Toby*'s hearts yearned with ſympathy upon the poor fellow's diſtreſs, — even *Slop* himſelf ac- knowledged pity for him. —— Why, *Trim*, ſaid my father, this is not a hiſtory, — 'tis a ſer- mon thou art reading; — prithee begin the ſen- tence again.] —— Behold this helpleſs victim " delivered up to his tormentors, — his bo- " dy ſo waſted with ſorrow and confinement, " you will ſee every nerve and muſcle as it ſuf- " fers.

" Obſerve the laſt movement of that horrid " engine! [I would rather face a cannon, quoth *Trim*, ſtamping.] — See what convul- " ſions it has thrown him into! — conſider the " nature of the poſture in which he now lies

" ſtretched,

" ſtretched, — what exquiſite tortures he en-
" dures by it! — [I hope 'tis not in *Portugal*] —
" 'Tis all nature can bear! Good God! ſee
" how it keeps his weary ſoul hanging upon his
" trembling lips! [I would not read another line of it, quoth *Trim*, for all this world; — I fear, an' pleaſe your Honours, all this is in *Portugal*, where my poor brother *Tom* is. I tell thee, *Trim*, again, quoth my father, 'tis not an hiſtorical account, — 'tis a deſcription. — 'Tis only a deſcription, honeſt man, quoth *Slop*, there is not a word of truth in it. —— That's another ſtory, replied my father. — However, as *Trim* reads it with ſo much concern, — 'tis cruelty to force him to go on with it. — Give me hold of the ſermon, *Trim*, — Ill finiſh it for thee, and thou may'ſt go. I muſt ſtay and hear it too, replied *Trim*, if your Honour will allow me; — tho' I would not read it myſelf for a Colonel's pay. —— Poor *Trim!* quoth my uncle *Toby*. My father went on.]

" —— Conſider the nature of the poſture in
" which he now lies ſtretched, — what exquiſite
" torture he endures by it! — 'Tis all nature can
" bear! — Good God! See how it keeps his
" weary ſoul hanging upon his trembling lips,
" willing to take its leave, — but not ſuffered
" to depart! — Behold the unhappy wretch led
" back to his cell! [Then, thank God, however, quoth *Trim*, they have not killed him]
" — See him dragged out of it again to meet
" the flames, and the inſults in his laſt agonies,
" which this principle, — this principle, that
" there can be religion without mercy, has pre-
" pared for him.

[Then

[Then, thank God,—he is dead, quoth *Trim*,—he is out of his pain,—and they have done their worſt at him.—O Sirs!—Hold your peace, *Trim*, ſaid my father, going on with the ſermon, leſt *Trim* ſhould incenſe Dr. *Slop*,—we ſhall never have done at this rate.]

" The ſureſt way to try the merit of any diſ-
" puted notion is, to trace down the conſequen-
" ces ſuch a notion has produced, and compare
" them with the ſpirit of chriſtianity;—'tis the
" ſhort and deciſive rule which our Saviour hath
" left us, for theſe and ſuch like caſes, and it
" is worth a thouſand arguments,—*By their*
" *Fruits ye ſhall know them.*

" I will add no further to the length of this
" ſermon, than, by two or three ſhort and in-
" dependent rules deducible from it.

" *Firſt*, Whenever a man talks loudly againſt
" religion,—always ſuſpect that it is not his rea-
" ſon, but his paſſions which have got the bet-
" ter of his CREED. A bad life and a good
" belief are diſagreeable and troubleſome neigh-
" bours, and were they ſeparate, depend upon
" it, 'tis for no other cauſe but quietneſs ſake.

" *Secondly*, When a man, thus repreſented,
" tells you in any particular inſtance,—That
" ſuch a thing goes *againſt* his conſcience,—
" always believe he means exactly the ſame
" thing, as when he tells you ſuch a thing goes
" *againſt* his ſtomach;—a preſent want of appe-
" tite being generally the true cauſe of both.

" In a word,—truſt that man in nothing, who
" has not a CONSCIENCE in every thing.

" And, in your own caſe, remember this
" plain diſtinction, a miſtake in which has

" ruined

" ruined thouſands, — that your conſcience is
" not a law: — No, God and reaſon made the
" law and have placed conſcience within you
" to determine; — not like an *Aſiatic* Cadi,
" according to the ebbs and flows of his own
" paſſions, — but like a *Britiſh* judge in this land
" of liberty and good ſenſe, who makes no new
" law, but faithfully declares that law which
" he knows already written."

FINIS.

Thou

Thou haſt read the ſermon extremely well, *Trim*, quoth my father.——If he had ſpared his comments, replied Dr. *Slop*, he would have read it much better. I ſhould have read it ten times better, Sir, anſwered *Trim*, but that my heart was ſo full.——That was the very reaſon, *Trim*, replied my father, which has made thee read the ſermon as well as thou haſt done; and if the clergy of our church, continued my father, addreſſing himſelf to Dr. *Slop*, would take part in what they deliver, as deeply as this poor fellow has done, — as their compoſitions are fine, (I deny it, quoth Dr. *Slop*,) I maintain it, that the eloquence of our pulpits, with ſuch ſubjects to inflame it, — would be a model for the whole world: — But, alas! continued my father, and I own it, Sir, with ſorrow, that, like *French* politicians in this reſpect, what they gain in the cabinet they loſe in the field.——'Twere a pity, quoth my uncle, that this ſhould be loſt. I like the ſermon well, replied my father, — 'tis dramatic, — and there is ſomething in that way of writing, when ſkilfully managed, which catches the attention. — We preach much in that way with us, ſaid Dr. *Slop*, — I know that very well, ſaid my father, — but in a tone and manner which diſguſted Dr. *Slop*, full as much as his aſſent, ſimply, could have pleaſed him.——But in this, added Dr. *Slop*, a little piqued, — our ſermons have greatly the advantage, that we never introduce any character into them below a patriarch or a patriarch's wife, or a martyr, or a ſaint. — There are ſome very bad characters in this, however, ſaid my father, I do not think the ſermon a jot the worſe for 'em —— But pray,

quoth my uncle *Toby*,— whoſe can this be?— how could it get into my *Stevinus?* A man muſt be as great a conjurer as *Stevinus*, ſaid my father, to reſolve the ſecond queſtion: — The firſt, I think, is not ſo difficult;—for unleſs my judgment greatly deceives me,— I know the author, for 'tis wrote, certainly, by the parſon of the pariſh.

The ſimilitude of the ſtile and manner of it, with thoſe my father conſtantly had heard preached in his pariſh-church, was the ground of his conjecture,— proving it as ſtrongly, as an argument *a priori*, could prove ſuch a thing to a philoſophic mind, that it was *Yorick*'s and no one's elſe; —— It was proved to be ſo *a poſteriori*, the day after, when *Yorick* ſent a ſervant to my uncle *Toby*'s houſe to enquire after it.

It ſeems that *Yorick*, who was inquiſitive after all kinds of knowledge, had borrowed *Stevinus* of my uncle *Toby*, and had careleſsly popped his ſermon, as ſoon as he had made it, into the middle of *Stevinus*; and by an act of forgetfulneſs, to which he was ever ſubject, he had ſent *Stevinus* home, and his ſermon to keep him company.

Ill-fated ſermon! Thou waſt loſt after this recovery of thee, a ſecond time, dropped thro' an unſuſpected fiſſure in thy maſter's pocket, down into a treacherous and tattered lining —— trod deep into the dirt by the left hind foot of his Roſinante, inhumanly ſtepping upon thee as thou falledſt;——buried ten days in the mire, raiſed up out of it by a beggar, ſold for a halfpenny to a pariſh-clerk, —— transferred to his parſon,—— loſt for ever to thy own, the remainder of his days,— nor reſtored to his reſtleſs

MANES

MANES till this very moment, that I tell the world the ſtory.

Can the reader believe, that this ſermon of *Yorick*'s was preached at an aſſize in the cathedral of *York*, before a thouſand witneſſes, ready to give oath of it, by a certain prebendary of that church, and actually printed by him when he had done, — and within ſo ſhort a ſpace as two years and three months after *Yorick*'s death. — *Yorick*, indeed, was never better ſerved in his life! — but it was a little hard to mal-treat him after, and plunder him after he was laid in his grave.

However, as the gentleman who did it, was in perfect charity with *Yorick*, — and, in conſcious juſtice, printed but a few copies to give away ;—and that, I am told, he could moreover have made as good a one himſelf, had he thought fit. —— I declare I would not have publiſhed this anecdote to the world ; —— nor do I publiſh it with an intent to hurt his character and advancement in the church ; —— I leave that to others ; — but I find myſelf impelled by two reaſons, which I cannot withſtand.

The firſt is, That in doing juſtice, I may give reſt to *Yorick*'s ghoſt ;—— which as the country people, — and ſome others, believe, — *ſtill walks*.

The ſecond reaſon is, That, by laying open this ſtory to the world, I gain an opportunity of informing it —— That in caſe the character of parſon *Yorick*, and this ſample of his ſermons is liked, — that there are now in the poſſeſſion of the *Shandy* Family, as many as will make a handſome volume, at the world's ſervice, — and much good may they do it.

CHAP. XVIII.

OBADIAH gained the two crowns without diſpute; for he came in jingling, with all the inſtruments in the green bays bag we ſpoke of, flung acroſs his body, juſt as corporal *Trim* went out of the room.

It is now proper, I think, quoth Dr. *Slop*, (clearing up his looks) as we are in a condition to be of ſome ſervice to Mrs. *Shandy*, to ſend up ſtairs to know how ſhe goes on.

I have ordered, anſwered my father, the old midwife to come down to us upon the leaſt difficulty;——for you muſt know, Dr. *Slop*, continued my father, with a perplexed kind of a ſmile upon his countenance, that by expreſs treaty, ſolemnly ratified between me and my wife, you are no more than an auxiliary in this affair,—and not ſo much as that,—unleſs the lean old mother of a midwife above ſtairs cannot do without you.——— Women have their particular fancies, and in points of this nature, continued my father, where they bear the whole burden, and ſuffer ſo much acute pain for the advantage of our families, and the good of the ſpecies—they claim a right of deciding, *en Soveraines*, in whoſe hands, and in what faſhion, they chooſe to undergo it.

They are in the right of it,—quoth my uncle *Toby*. But, Sir, replied Dr. *Slop*, not taking notice of my uncle *Toby*'s opinion, but turning to my father,—they had better govern in other points;—and a father of a family, who wiſhed its perpetuity, in my opinion had better exchange

change this prerogative with them, and give up ſome other rights in lieu of it.——I know not, quoth my father, anſwering a little too teſtily, to be quite diſpaſſionate in what he ſaid,—I know not, quoth he, what we have left to give up, in lieu of who ſhall bring our children into the world—unleſs that—of who ſhall beget them.——One would almoſt give up any thing, replied Dr. *Slop*—I beg your pardon,—anſwered my uncle *Toby*.——Sir, replied Dr. *Slop*, it would aſtoniſh you to know what improvements we have made of late years in all branches of obſtetrical knowledge, but particularly in that one ſingle point of the ſafe and expeditious extraction of the *fœtus*—which has received ſuch lights, that, for my part, (holding up his hands) I declare I wonder how the world has—I wiſh, quoth my uncle *Toby*, you had ſeen what prodigious armies we had in *Flanders*.

CHAP. XIX.

I Have dropped the curtain over this ſcene for a minute,—to remind you of one thing,—and to inform you of another.

What I have to inform you, comes, I own, a little out of its due courſe—for it ſhould have been told a hundred and fifty pages ago, but that I foreſaw then, 'twould come in pat hereafter, and be of more advantage here than elſewhere—Writers had need look before them to keep up the ſpirit and connection of what they have in hand.

When theſe two things are done,—the cur-

tain ſhall be drawn up again, and my uncle *Toby*, my father, and Dr. *Slop* ſhall go on with their diſcourſe, without any more interruption.

Firſt, then, the matter which I have to remind you of, is this;—that from the ſpecimens of ſingularity in my father's notions in the point of Chriſtian-names, and that other point previous thereto,—you was led, I think, into an opinion, (and I am ſure I ſaid as much) that my father was a gentleman altogether as odd and whimſical in fifty other opinions. In truth, there was not a ſtage in the life of man, from the very firſt act of his begetting,—down to the lean and ſlippered pantaloon in his ſecond childiſhneſs, but he had ſome favourite notion to himſelf, ſpringing out of it, as ſceptical, and as far out of the high-way of thinking, as theſe two which have been explained.

———Mr. *Shandy*, my father, Sir, would ſee nothing in the light in which others placed it;—he placed things in his own light;—he would weigh nothing in common ſcales;—no,—he was too refined a reſearcher to lay open to ſo groſs an impoſition.——To come to the exact weight of things in the ſcientific ſteel-yard, the fulcrum, he would ſay, ſhould be almoſt inviſible, to avoid all friction from popular tenets;—without this the minutiæ of philoſophy, which ſhould always turn the balance, will have no weight at all.——Knowledge, like matter, he would affirm, was diviſible *in infinitum*;—that the grains and ſcruples were as much a part of it, as the gravitation of the whole world ——In a word, he would ſay, error was error,—no matter where it fell,——whether in a fraction,—or a pound,—'twas alike fatal to truth, and ſhe was kept

kept down at the bottom of her well as inevitably by a miſtake in the duſt of a butterfly's wing, as in the diſk of the ſun, the moon, and all the ſtars of heaven put together.

He would often lament that it was for want of conſidering this properly, and of applying it ſkilfully to civil matters, as well as to ſpeculative truths, that ſo many things in this world were out of joint: — that the political arch was giving way — and that the very foundations of our excellent conſtitution in church and ſtate, were ſo ſapped, as eſtimators had reported.

You cry out, he would, ſay, we are a ruined, undone people—Why?—he would aſk, making uſe of the ſorites or ſyllogiſm of *Zeno* and *Chryſippus*, without knowing it belonged to them. — Why? why are we a ruined people? — Becauſe we are corrupted. — Whence is it, dear Sir, that you are corrupted?——Becauſe we are needy; —our poverty, and not our wills, conſent.—— And wherefore, he would add,—are we needy? —— From the neglect, he would anſwer, of our pence and our halfpence: —— Our bank notes, Sir, our guineas,—nay our ſhillings, take care of themſelves.

'Tis the ſame, he would ſay, throughout the whole circle of the ſciences;——the great, the eſtabliſhed points of them, are not to be broke in upon. ——— The laws of nature will defend themſelves; ——but error ——(he would add, looking earneſtly at my mother)——error, Sir, creeps in thro' the minute-holes, and ſmall crevices, which human nature leaves unguarded.

This turn of thinking in my father, is what I had to remind you of:——The point you are

to be informed of, and which I have reſerved for this place, is as follows:

Amongſt the many and excellent reaſons, with which my father had urged my mother to accept of Dr. *Slop*'s aſſiſtance preferably to that of the old woman,——there was one of a very ſingular nature; which, when he had done arguing the matter with her as a Chriſtian, and came to argue it over again with her as a philoſopher,—— he had put his whole ſtrength to, depending indeed upon it as his ſheet anchor. ——— It failed him; though from no defect in the argument itſelf; but that, do what he could, he was not able for his ſoul to make her comprehend the drift of it —— Curſed luck! — ſaid he to himſelf, one afternoon, as he walked out of the room, after he had been ſtating it for an hour and an half to her, to no manner of purpoſe; ——— curſed luck! ſaid he, biting his lip as he ſhut the door, — for a man to be maſter of one of the fineſt chains of reaſoning in nature, —— and have a wife at the ſame time with ſuch a head-piece, that he cannot hang up a ſingle inference withinſide of it, to ſave his ſoul from deſtruction.

This argument, though it was intirely loſt upon my mother, ——— had more weight with him, than all his other arguments joined together: — I will therefore endeavour to do it juſtice, — and ſet it forth with all the perſpicuity I am maſter of.

My father ſet out upon the ſtrength of theſe two following axioms:

Firſt, That an ounce of a man's own wit, was worth a tun of other people's; and,

Secondly, (Which, by the bye, was the ground-

ground-work of the firſt axiom, — tho' it comes laſt) ——— That every man's wit muſt come from every man's own ſoul, — and no other body's.

Now, as it was plain to my father, that all ſouls were by nature equal, — and that the great difference between the moſt acute and the moſt obtuſe underſtanding, — was from no original ſharpneſs or bluntneſs of one thinking ſubſtance above or below another, — but aroſe merely from the lucky or unlucky organization of the body, in that part where the ſoul principally took up her reſidence, — he had made it the ſubject of his enquiry to find out the identical place.

Now, from the beſt accounts he had been able to get of this matter, he was ſatisfied it could not be where *De Cartes* had fixed it, upon the top of the *pineal* gland of the brain; which as he philoſophized, formed a cuſhion for her about the ſize of a marrow pea; —— though, to ſpeak the truth, as ſo many nerves did terminate all in that one place, — 'twas no bad conjecture; and my father had certainly fallen with that great philoſopher plump into the centre of the miſtake, had it not been for my uncle *Toby*, — who reſcued him out of it, by a ſtory he told him of a *Walloon* Officer at the battle of *Landen*, who had one part of his brain ſhot away by a muſket-ball, — and another part of it taken out after by a *French* Surgeon; and after all recovered, and did his duty very well without it.

If death, ſaid my father, reaſoning with himſelf, is nothing but the ſeparation of the ſoul from the body; — and if it is true that people can walk about and do their buſineſs without

brains —— then certes the ſoul does not inhabit there. Q. E. D.

As for that certain very thin, ſubtile, and very fragrant juice which *Coglioniſſimo Borri*, the great *Milaneze* phyſician, affirms, in a letter to *Bartholin*, to have diſcovered in the cellulæ of the occipital parts of the cerebellum, and which he likewiſe affirms to be the principal ſeat of the reaſonable ſoul (for, you muſt know, in theſe latter and more enlightened ages, there are two ſouls in every man living, — the one, according to the great *Metheglingius*, being called the *Animus*, the other the *Anima)*; — as for this opinion, I ſay of *Borri*, — my father could never ſubſcribe to it by any means; the very idea of ſo noble, ſo refined, ſo immaterial, and ſo exalted a being as the *Anima*, or even the *Animus*, taking up her reſidence, and ſitting dabbling, like a tadpole, all day long, both ſummer and winter, in a puddle, — or in a liquid of any kind, how thick or thin ſoever, he would ſay, ſhock'd his imagination; he would ſcarce give the doctrine a hearing.

What, therefore, ſeem'd the leaſt liable to objections of any, was, that the chief ſenſorium, or head-quarters of the ſoul, and to which place all intelligences were referred, and from whence all her mandates were iſſued, — was in, or near, the cerebellum, or rather ſome-where about the *medulla oblongata*, wherein it was generally agreed by *Dutch* anatomiſts, that all the minute nerves from all the organs of the ſeven ſenſes concentered, like ſtreets and winding alleys, into a ſquare.

So far there was nothing ſingular in my father's opinion, — he had the beſt of philoſophers, of all

all ages and climates, to go along with him. ——But here he took a road of his own, ſetting up another *Shandean* hypotheſis upon theſe corner-ſtones they had laid for him;—and which ſaid hypotheſis equally ſtood its ground; whether the ſubtilty and fineneſs of the ſoul depended upon the temperature and cleaneſs of the ſaid liquor, or of the finer net-work and texture in the cerebellum itſelf; which opinion he favoured.

He maintained, that next to the due care to be taken in the act of propagation of each individual, which required all the thought in the world, as it laid the foundation of this incomprehenſible contexture in which wit, memory, fancy, eloquence, and what is uſually meant by the name of good natural parts, do conſiſt;—that next to this and his chriſtian-name, which were the two original and moſt efficacious cauſes of all;——that the third, or rather what logicians call the *cauſa ſine qua non*, and without which all that was done was of no manner of ſignificance,—was the preſervation of this delicate and fine ſpun web, from the havock which was generally made in it by the violent compreſſion and cruſh which the head was made to undergo, by the nonſenſical method of bringing us into the world by that part foremoſt.

This requires explanation.

My father, who dipp'd into all kinds of books, upon looking into *Lithopedus Senoneſis de Partu difficili**, publiſhed by *Adrianus Smelvogt*, had

* The author is here twice miſtaken;—for *Lithopædus* ſhould be wrote thus, *Lithopædii Senonenſis Icon.*

had found out, that the lax and pliable ſtate of a child's head in parturition, the bones of the cranium having no ſutures at this time, was ſuch,—that by the force of the woman's efforts, which, in ſtrong labour-pains, was equal, upon an average, to a weight of 470 pounds averdupoiſe acting perpendicularly upon it;—it ſo happened that in 49 inſtances out of 50, the ſaid head was compreſſed and moulded into the ſhape of an oblong conical piece of dough, ſuch as a paſtry-cook generally rolls up in order to make a pye of.——Good God! cried my father, what havock and deſtruction muſt this make in the infinitely fine and tender texture of the cerebellum!—Or if there is ſuch a juice as *Borri* pretends,—is it not enough to make the cleareſt liquor in the world both feculent and mothery?

But how great was his apprehenſion, when he further underſtood, that this force, acting upon the very vertex of the head, not only injured the brain itſelf or cerebrum,—but that it neceſſarily ſqueez'd and propell'd the cerebrum towards the cerebellum, which was the immediate ſeat of the underſtanding.——Angels and miniſters of grace defend us! cried my father,—can any ſoul withſtand this ſhock?——No wonder the

Icon. The ſecond miſtake is, that this *Lithopædus* is not an author, but a drawing of a petrified child. The account of this, publiſhed by *Albofius*, 1580, may be ſeen at the end of *Cordæus*'s works in *Spachius*. Mr. *Triſtram Shandy* has been led into this error, either from ſeeing *Lithopædus*'s name of late in a catalogue of learned writers in Dr.——, or by miſtaking *Lithopædus* for *Trinecavellius*,—from the too great ſimilitude of the names.

the intellectual web is ſo rent and tatter'd as we ſee it; and that ſo many of our beſt heads are no better than a puzzled ſkein of ſilk, — all perplexity, — all confuſion within-ſide.

But when my father read on and was let into the ſecret, that when a child was turn'd topſy-turvy, which was eaſy for an operator to do, and was extracted by the feet; — that inſtead of the cerebrum being propell'd towards the cerebellum, the cerebellum, on the contrary, was propell'd ſimply towards the cerebrum where it could do no manner of hurt: —— By heavens! cried he, the world is in a conſpiracy to drive out what little wit God has given us, — and the profeſſors of the obſtetric art are liſted into the ſame conſpiracy. —— What is it to me which end of my ſon comes foremoſt into the world, provided all goes right after, and his cerebellum eſcapes uncruſhed?

It is the nature of an hypotheſis, when once a man has conceived it, that it aſſimulates every thing to itſelf as proper nouriſhment; and from the firſt moment of your begetting it, it generally grows the ſtronger by every thing you ſee, hear, read, or underſtand. This is of great uſe.

When my father was gone with this about a month, there was ſcarce a phenomenon of ſtupidity or genius, which he could not readily ſolve by it; — it accounted for the eldeſt ſon being the greateſt blockhead in the family. — Poor Devil, he would ſay, — he made way for the capacity of his younger brothers — It unriddled the obſervation of drivellers and monſtrous heads, — ſhewing, *a priori*, it could not be otherwiſe, — unleſs **** I don't know what. It wonderfully

wonderfully explain'd and accounted for the acumen of the *Aſiatic* genius, and that ſprightlier turn, and a more penetrating intuition of minds, in warmer climates; not from the looſe and common-place ſolution of a clearer ſky, and a more perpetual ſun-ſhine, *&c.*— which, for aught we know, might as well rarify and dilute the faculties of the ſoul into nothing by one extreme,—as they are condenſed in colder climates by the other;——but he traced the affair up to its ſpring-head;—ſhew'd that in warmer climates nature had laid a lighter tax upon the faireſt parts of the creation;—their pleaſures more;—the neceſſity of their pains leſs, inſomuch that the preſſure and reſiſtance upon the vertex was ſo ſlight that the whole organization of the cerebellum was preſerved;—nay, he did not believe, in natural births, that ſo much as a ſingle thread of the network was broke or diſplaced,—ſo that the ſoul might juſt act as ſhe liked.

When my father had got ſo far,——what a blaze of light did the accounts of the *Cæſarean* ſection, and of the towering geniuſes, who had come ſafe into the world by it, caſt upon this hypotheſis? Here you ſee, he would ſay, there was no injury done to the cenſorium;—no preſſure of the head againſt the pelvis;—no propulſion of the cerebrum towards the cerebellum either by the *os pubis* on this ſide, or the *os coxcygis* on that—and, pray, what were the happy conſequences? Why, Sir, your *Julius Caeſar*, who gave the operation a name;—and your *Hermes Triſmegiſtus*, who was born ſo before ever the operation had a name;—your *Scipio Africanus*; your *Manlius Torquatus*; our *Edward* the ſixth,

—who,

— who, had he lived would have done the ſame honour to the hypotheſis: —— Theſe, and many more, who figured high in the annals of fame — all came *ſide-way*, Sir, into the world.

This inciſion of the *abdomen* and *uterus*, ran for ſix weeks together in my fathers head; —— he had read, and was ſatisfied that wounds in the *epigaſtrium*, and thoſe in the *matrix*, were not mortal — ſo that the belly of the mother might be opened extremely well to give a paſſage to the child. — he mentioned the thing one afternoon to my mother, — merely as a matter of fact but ſeeing her turn as pale as aſhes at the very mention of it, as much as the operation flattered his hopes, — he thought it as well to ſay no more of it, — contenting himſelf with admiring — what he thought was to no purpoſe to propoſe.

This was my father Mr. *Shandy*'s hypotheſis; concerning which I have only to add, that my brother *Bobby* did as great honour to it (whatever he did to the family) as any one of the great heroes we ſpoke of: —— for happening not only to be chriſten'd, as I told you, but to be born too, when my father was at *Epſom* — being moreover my mother's *firſt* child, — coming into the world with its head *foremoſt*, — and turning out afterwards a lad of wonderful ſlow parts, — my father ſpelt all theſe together into his opinon; and as he had failed at one end, — he was determined to try the other.

This was not to be expected from one of the fiſterhood, who are not eaſily to be put out of their way, — and was therefore one of my father's great reaſons in favour of a man of ſcience, whom he could better deal with.

Of

Of all men in the world, Dr. *Slop* was the fitteſt for my father's purpoſe;—for tho' his new invented forceps was the armour he had prov'd and what he maintained, to be the ſafeſt inſtrument of deliverance,—yet it ſeems, he had ſcattered a word or two in his book, in favour of the very thing which ran in my father's fancy;—tho' not with a view to the ſoul's good in extracting by the feet, as was my father's ſyſtem,—but for reaſons merely obſtetrical.

This will account for the coalition betwixt my father and Dr. *Slop*, in the enſuing diſcourſe, which went a little hard againſt my uncle *Toby*.

——In what manner a plain man, with nothing but common ſenſe, could bear up againſt two ſuch allies in ſcience,—is hard to conceive.——You may conjecture upon it, if you pleaſe,—and whilſt your imagination is in motion, you may encourage it to go on, and diſcover by what cauſes and effects in nature it could come to paſs, that my uncle *Toby* got his modeſty by the wound he received upon his groin.——You may raiſe a ſyſtem to account for the loſs of my noſe by marriage articles,—and ſhew the world how it could happen, that I ſhould have the misfortune to be called TRISTRAM, in oppoſition to my father's hypotheſis, and the wiſh of the whole family, God-fathers and God-mothers not excepted.——Theſe, with fifty other points left yet unravelled, you may endeavour to ſolve if you have time;——but I tell you before-hand it will be in vain,—for not the ſage *Alquiſe*, the magician in Don *Bellianus* of *Greece*, nor the no leſs famous *Urganda*, the ſorcereſs his wife, (were they alive)

live) could pretend to come within a league of the truth.

The reader will be content to wait for a full explanation of these matters till the next year, —when a series of things will be laid open which he little expects.

END of the SECOND VOLUME.

THE LIFE AND OPINIONS OF TRISTRAM SHANDY, GENTLEMAN.

Multitudinis imperitæ non formido judicia; meis tamen, rogo, parcant opuſculis —— in quibus fuit propoſiti ſemper, a joeis ad ſeria, a ſeriis viciſſim ad jocos tranſire.

JOAN. SARESBERIENSIS,
Epiſcopus Lugdun.

VOL. III.

THE LIFE and OPINIONS OF TRISTRAM SHANDY, Gt.

CHAP. I.

——"I *wiſh*, Dr. *Slop*," quoth my uncle *Toby* (repeating his wiſh for Dr. *Slop* a ſecond time, and with a degree of more zeal and earneſtneſs in his manner of wiſhing, than he wiſhed it at firſt *) —"*I wiſh*, Dr. "*Slop*," quoth my uncle *Toby*, "*you had ſeen* "*what prodigious armies we had in Flanders.*"

My uncle *Toby*'s wiſh did Dr. *Slop* a diſſervice which his heart never intended any man, —— Sir, it confounded him — and thereby putting his

* Vid. Vol. II. p. 173.

his ideas firſt into confuſion, and then to flight, he could not rally them again for the ſoul of him.

In all diſputes, — male or female, — whether for honour, for profit or for love, — it makes no difference in the caſe; — nothing is more dangerous, madam, than a wiſh coming ſideways in this unexpected manner upon a man: the ſafeſt way in general to take off the force of the wiſh, is, for the party wiſhed at, inſtantly to get up upon his legs — and wiſh the *wiſher* ſomething in return, of pretty near the ſame value, — ſo balancing the account upon the ſpot, you ſtand as you were — nay, ſometimes gain the advantage of the attack by it.

This will be fully illuſtrated to the world in my chapter of wiſhes.

Dr. *Slop* did not underſtand the nature of this defence; —— he was puzzled with it, and, it put an entire ſtop to the diſpute for four minutes and a half; — five had been fatal to it: — my father ſaw the danger —— the diſpute was one of the moſt intereſting diſputes in the world, "Whether the child of his prayers and endeavours ſhould be born without a head or with one:" —— he waited to the laſt moment to allow Dr. *Slop*, in whoſe behalf the wiſh was made, his right of returning it; but perceiving, I ſay, that he was confounded, and continued looking with that perplexed vacuity of eye which puzzled ſouls generally ſtare with, — firſt in my uncle *Toby*'s face — then in his — then up — then down — then eaſt — eaſt and by eaſt, and ſo on, — coaſting it along by the plinth of the wainſcot till he had got to the oppoſite point of the compaſs, — and that he had actually begun to count the

the braſs nails upon the arm of his chair —— my father thought there was no time to be loſt with my uncle *Toby*, ſo took up the diſcourſe as follows.

CHAP. II.

"—— WHAT prodigious armies you had in *Flanders*." ——

Brother *Toby*, replied my father, taking his wig from off his head with his right hand, and with his *left* pulling out a ſtriped *India* handkerchief from his right coat pocket, in order to rub his head, as he argued the point with my uncle *Toby*. ——

—— Now, in this I think my father was much to blame; and I will give you my reaſons for it.

Matters of no more ſeeming conſequence in themſelves than, "*Whether my father ſhould have taken off his wig with his right hand or with his left*," — have divided the greateſt kingdoms, and made the crowns of the monarchs who governed them, to totter upon their heads. — But need I tell you, Sir, that the circumſtances with which every thing in this world is begirt, give every thing in this world its ſize and ſhape; — and by tightening it, or relaxing it, this way or that, make the thing to be, what it is — great — little — good — bad — indifferent or not indifferent, juſt as the caſe happens.

As my father's *India* handkerchief was in his right coat pocket, he ſhould by no means have ſuffered his right hand to have got engaged: on the contrary, inſtead of taking off his wig with it,

it, as he did, he ought to have committed that entirely to the left; and then, when the natural exigency my father was under of rubbing his head, call'd out for his handkerchief, he would have had nothing in the world to have done, but to have put his right hand into his right coat pocket and taken it out; — which he might have done without any violence, or the leaſt ungraceful twiſt in any one tendon or muſcle of his whole body.

In this caſe, (unleſs indeed my father had been reſolved to make a fool of himſelf by holding the wig ſtiff in his left hand — or by making ſome nonſenſical angle or other at his elbow joint, or arm-pit) — his whole attitude had been eaſy — natural — unforced: *Reynolds* himſelf, as great and gracefully as he paints, might have painted him as he ſat.

Now as my father managed this matter, — conſider what a devil of a figure my father made of himſelf.

— In the latter end of Queen *Anne*'s reign, and in the beginning of the reign of King *George* the firſt — "*Coat pockets were cut very low down in the ſkirt.*" — I need ſay no more — the father of miſchief, had he had been hammering at it a month, could not have contrived a worſe faſhion for one in my father's ſituation.

CHAP. III.

IT was not an eaſy matter in any king's reign, (unleſs you were as lean a ſubject as myſelf) to have forced your hand diagonally, quite acroſs your whole body, ſo as to gain the bottom of your

your oppoſite coat pocket.—In the year, one thouſand ſeven hundred and eighteen, when this happened, it was extremely difficult; ſo that when my uncle *Toby* diſcovered the tranſverſe zig-zaggery of my father's approaches towards it, it inſtantly brought into his mind thoſe he had done duty in, before the gate of St. *Nicolas*;—the idea of which drew off his attention ſo entirely from the ſubject in debate, that he had got his right hand to the bell to ring up *Trim*, to go and fetch his map of *Namur*, and his compaſſes and ſector along with it, to meaſure the returning angles of the traverſes of that attack,—but particularly of that one, where he received his wound upon his groin.

My father knit his brows, and as he knit them, all the blood in his body ſeemed to ruſh in his face—my uncle *Toby* diſmounted immediately.

—I did not apprehend your uncle *Toby* was o' horſeback.—

CHAP. IV.

A Man's body and his mind, with the utmoſt reverence to both I ſpeak it, are exactly like a jerkin, and a jerkin's lining;—rumple the one,—you rumple the other. There is one certain exception however in this caſe, and that is, when you are ſo fortunate a fellow, as to have had your jerkin made of a gumtaffeta, and the body-lining to it, of a ſarcenet or thin perſian.

Zeno, *Cleanthes*, *Diogenes Babylonius*, *Dionyſius Heracleotes*, *Antipater*, *Panætius* and *Poſſidonius*

donius amongſt the *Greeks*;—*Cato* and *Varro* and *Seneca* amongſt the *Romans*;—*Pantenus* and *Clemens Alexandrinus* and *Montaigne* amongſt the Chriſtians; and a ſcore and a half of good honeſt, unthinking, *Shandean* people as ever lived, whoſe names I can't recollect,—all pretended that their jerkins were made after this faſhion,—you might have rumpled and crumpled, and doubled and creaſed, and fretted and fridged the outſides of them all to pieces;—in ſhort, you might have played the very devil with them, and at the ſame time, not one of the inſides of 'em would have been one button the worſe, for all you had done to them.

I believe in my conſcience that mine is made up ſomewhat after this ſort:—for never poor jerkin has been tickled off, at ſuch a rate as it has been theſe laſt nine months together,—and yet I declare the lining to it,—as far as I am a judge of the matter, is not a three-penny piece the worſe;—pell mell, helter ſkelter, ding dong, cut and thruſt, back ſtroke and fore ſtroke, ſide way and long way, have they been trimming it for me:—had there been the leaſt gumminess in my lining,—by heaven! it had all of it long ago been fray'd and fretted to a thread.

—You Meſſrs. the monthly Reviewers!—how could you cut and ſlaſh my jerkin as you did?—how did you know but you would cut my lining too?

Heartily and from my ſoul, to the protection of that Being who will injure none of us, do I recommend you and your affairs,—ſo God bleſs you;—only next month, if any of you ſhould gnaſh his teeth, and ſtorm and rage at me, as ſome of you did laſt MAY, (in which I remember

ber the weather was very hot) — don't be exaſperated, if I paſs it by again with good temper, — being determined as long as I live or write (which in my caſe means the ſame thing) never to give the honeſt Gentleman a worſe word or a worſe wiſh than my uncle *Toby* gave the fly which buzz'dabout his noſe all *dinner time*, — "Go, — "go, poor devil," quoth he, "— get thee "gone, — why ſhould I hurt thee? This "world is ſurely wide enough to hold both "thee and me."

CHAP. V.

ANY man, madam, reaſoning upwards, and obſerving the prodigious ſuffuſion of blood in my father's countenance, — by means of which, (as all the blood in his body ſeemed to ruſh up into his face, as I told you) he muſt have redden'd, pictorically and ſcientintically ſpeaking, ſix whole tints and a half, if not a full octave above his natural colour — any man, madam, but my uncle *Toby*, who had obſerved this, together with the violent knitting of my father's brows, and the extravagant contortion of his body during the whole affair, — would have concluded my father in a rage; and taking that for granted, — had he been a lover of ſuch kind of concord as ariſes from two ſuch inſtruments being put into exact tune, — he would inſtantly have ſkrew'd up his, to the ſame pitch; — and then the Devil and all had broke looſe — the whole piece, madam, muſt have been played off like the ſixth of Aviſon Scarlatti — *con furia*, — like mad. — Grant me patience! — What

has *con furia*, — *con ſtrepito*, — or any other hurlyburly word whatever to do with harmony?

Any man, I ſay, madam, but my uncle *Toby*, the benignity of whoſe heart interpretted every motion of the body in the kindeſt ſenſe the motion would admit of, would have concluded my father angry and blamed him too. My uncle *Toby* blamed nothing but the taylor who cut the pocket-hole; — ſo ſitting ſtill, till my father had got his handkerchief out of it, and looking all the time up in his face with inexpreſſible good will — my father at length went on as follows.

CHAP. VI.

—— "WHAT prodigious armies you had in *Flanders!*"

—— Brother *Toby*, quoth my father, I do believe thee to be as honeſt a man, and with as good and as upright a heart as ever God created; — nor is it thy fault, if all the children which have been, may, can, ſhall, will or ought to be begotten, come with their heads foremoſt into the world: — but, believe me, dear *Toby*, the accidents which unavoidably way-lay them, not only in the article of our begetting 'em, — though theſe, in my opinion, are well worth conſidering, — but the dangers and difficulties our children are beſet with, after they are got forth into the world, are enow, — little need is there to expoſe them to unneceſſary ones in their paſſage to it —— Are theſe dangers, quoth my uncle *Toby*, laying his hand upon my father's knee, and looking up ſeriouſly in his face for an anſwer, — are theſe dangers greater

now

now o'days, brother, than in times paſt? Brother *Toby*, anſwered my father, if a child was but fairly begot, and born alive, and healthy, and the mother did well after,—our forefathers never looked further.—My uncle *Toby* inſtantly withdrew his hand from off my father's knee, reclined his body gently back in his chair, raiſed his head till he could juſt ſee the corniſh of the room, and then directing the buccinatory muſcles along his cheeks, and the orbicular muſcles around his lips to do their duty—he whiſtled *Lillabullero*.

CHAP. VII.

WHILST my uncle *Toby* was whiſtling Lillabullero to my father,—Dr. *Slop* was ſtamping, and curſing and damning at *Obadiah* at a moſt dreadful rate;—it would have done your heart good, and cured you, Sir, for ever, of the vile ſin of ſwearing to have heard him.—I am determined therefore to relate the whole affair to you.

When Dr. *Slop*'s maid delivered the green bays bag, with her maſter's inſtruments in it, to *Obadiah*, ſhe very ſenſibly exhorted him to put his head and one arm through the ſtrings, and ride with it ſlung acroſs his body: ſo undoing the bow-knot, to lengthen the ſtrings for him, without any more ado, ſhe helped him on with it. However, as this, in ſome meaſure, unguarded the mouth of the bag, leſt any thing ſhould bolt out in galloping back at the ſpeed *Obadiah* threatened, they conſulted to take it off again; and in the great care and caution of their

hearts, they had taken the two ſtrings and tied them cloſe (purſing up the mouth of the bag firſt) with half a dozen hard knots, each of which, *Obadiah*, to make all ſafe, had twitched and drawn together with all the ſtrength of his body.

This anſwered all that *Obadiah* and the maid intended; but was no remedy againſt ſome evils which neither he or ſhe foreſaw. The inſtruments, it ſeems, as tight as the bag was tied above, had ſo much room to play in it, towards the bottom, (the ſhape of the bag being conical) that *Obadiah* could not make a trot of it, but with ſuch a terrible jingle, what with the *tire-tête*, *forceps* and *ſquirt*, as would have been enough, had *Hymen* been taking a jaunt that way, to have frightened him out of the country; but when *Obadiah* accelerated this motion, and from a plain trot aſſayed to prick his coach-horſe into a full gallop — by heaven! Sir, — the jingle was incredible.

As *Obadiah* had a wife and three children ——— The turpitude of fornication, and the many other political ill conſequences of this jingling, never once entered his brain, —— he had however his objection, which came home to himſelf, and weighed with him, as it has oft-times done with the greateſt patriots. —— "*The poor fellow, Sir, was not able to hear himſelf whiſtle.*"

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

AS *Obadiah* loved wind muſick preferably to all the inſtrumental muſick he carried with him, — he very conſiderately ſet his imagination to work, to contrive and to invent by what means he ſhould put himſelf in a condition of enjoying it.

In all diſtreſſes (except muſical) where ſmall cords are wanted, — nothing is ſo apt to enter a man's head, as his hat-band? — the philoſophy of this is ſo near the ſurface — I ſcorn to enter into it.

As *Obadiah*'s was a mix'd caſe, — mark, Sirs, — I ſay, a mix'd caſe; for it was obſtetrical, —*ſcrip*-tical,—ſquirtical, papiſtical,—and as far as the coach horſe was concerned in it,— caballiſtical — and only partly muſical; —— *Obadiah* made no ſcruple of availing himſelf of the firſt expedient which offered; — ſo taking hold of the bag and inſtruments, and griping them hard together with one hand, and with the finger and thumb of the other, putting the end of the hat-band betwixt his teeth, and then ſlipping his hand down to the middle of it,—he tied and croſs-tied them all faſt together from one end to the other (as you would cord a trunk) with ſuch a multiplicity of round-abouts and intricate croſs turns, with a hard knot at every interſection or point where the ſtrings met,—that Dr. *Slop* muſt

have had three fifths of *Job*'s patience at leaſt to have unlooſed them.—— I think in my conſcience, that had NATURE been in one of her nimble moods, and in humour for ſuch a conteſt — and ſhe and Dr. *Slop* both fairly ſtarted together — there is no man living who had ſeen the bag with all that *Obadiah* had done at it, — and known likewiſe the great ſpeed the goddeſs can make when ſhe thinks proper, who would have had the leaſt doubt remaining in his mind—— which of the two would have carried off the prize. My mother, madam, had been delivered ſooner than the green bag infallibly —— at leaſt by twenty *knots*.— Sport of ſmall accidents, *Triſtram Shandy!* that thou art, and ever wilt be! had that trial been made for thee, and it was fifty to one but it had, — thy affairs had not been ſo depreſs'd — (at leaſt by the depreſſion of thy noſe) as they have been; nor had the fortunes of thy houſe and the occaſions of making them, which have ſo often preſented themſelves in the courſe of thy life, to thee been ſo often, ſo vexatiouſly, ſo tamely, ſo irrecoverably abondoned — as thou haſt been forced to leave them! — but 'tis over, — all but the account of 'em, which cannot be given to the curious till I am got out into the world.

CHAP. IX.

GREAT wits jump: for the moment Dr. *Slop* caſt his eyes upon his bag (which he had

had not done till the diſpute with my uncle *Toby* about midwifery put him in mind of it) — the very ſame thought occurred. —— 'Tis God's mercy, quoth he, (to himſelf) that Mrs. *Shandy* has had ſo bad a time of it, — elſe ſhe might have been brought to bed ſeven times told, before one half of theſe knots could have got untied. ——— But here, you muſt diſtinguiſh — the thought floated only in Dr. *Slop*'s mind, without ſail or ballaſt to it, as a ſimple propoſition; millions of which, as your worſhip knows, are every day ſwimming quietly in the middle of the thin juice of a man's underſtanding without being carried backwards or forwards, till ſome little guſts of paſſion or intereſt drive them to one ſide.

A ſudden trampling in the room above near my mother's bed, did the propoſition the very ſervice I am ſpeaking of. By all that's unfortunate, quoth Dr. *Slop*, unleſs I make haſte, the thing will actually befall me as it is.

CHAP. X.

IN the caſe of *knots*, — by which, in the firſt place, I would not be underſtood to mean ſlip-knots, — becauſe in the courſe of my life and opinions, — my opinions concerning them will come in more properly when I mention the cataſtrophe of my great uncle Mr. *Hammond Shandy*, — a little man, — but of high fancy: — he

ruſhed into the duke of *Monmouth*'s affair; — nor, ſecondly, in this place, do I mean that particular ſpecies of knots, call'd bow-knots; — there is ſo little addreſs, or ſkill, or patience, required in the unlooſing them, that they are below my giving any opinion at all about them. —— But by the knots I am ſpeaking of, may it pleaſe your reverences to believe, that I mean good, honeſt, deviliſh tight, hard knots, made *bona fide*, as *Obadiah* made his;—in which there is no quibbling proviſion made by the duplication and return of the two ends of the ſtrings through the annulous or nooſe made by the ſecond *implication* of them — to get them ſlipp'd and undone by — I hope you apprehend me.

In the caſe of theſe *knots* then, and of the ſeveral obſtructions, which (may it pleaſe your reverences, ſuch knots caſt in our way in getting through life — every haſty man can whip out his penknife and cut through them. —— 'Tis wrong. Believe me, Sirs, the moſt virtuous way, and which both reaſon and conſcience dictate — is to take our teeth or our fingers to them. — Dr. *Slop* either by extracting his favourite inſtrument in a wrong direction, or, by ſome miſapplication of it, unfortunately ſlipping, he had formerly, in a hard labour, knock'd out three of the beſt of his teeth, with the handle of it: — he tried his fingers — alas! the nails of his fingers and thumbs were cut cloſe. —— the duce take it! I can make nothing of it either way, cried Dr. *Slop*. —— The trampling over head near my mother's bedſide increaſed. —— Pox take the fellow! I ſhall never get the knots untied as long as I live. ——

My

My mother gave a groan — Lend me your pen-knife — I muſt e'en cut the knots at laſt — pugh! — pſhaw! — Lord! I have cut my thumb quite acroſs to the very bone — curſe the fellow — if there was not another man mid-wife within fifty miles — I am undone for this bout — I wiſh the ſcoundrel hang'd — I wiſh he was ſhot — I wiſh all the devils in hell had him for a blockhead. —

My father had a great reſpect for *Obadiah*, and could not bear to hear him diſpoſed of in ſuch a manner—he had moreover ſome little reſpect for himſelf — and could as ill bear with the indignity offer'd to himſelf in it.

Had Dr. *Slop* cut any part about him, but his thumb — my father had paſſed it by — his prudence had triumphed: as it was, he was determined to have his revenge.

Small curſes, Dr. *Slop*, upon great occaſions, quoth my father, (condoling with him firſt upon the accident) are but ſo much waſte of our ſtrength and ſoul's health to no manner of purpoſe. —— I own it replied Dr. *Slop*. ——— They are like ſparrow ſhot, quoth my uncle *Toby*, (ſuſpending his whiſtling) fired againſt a baſtion. —— They ſerve, continued my father, to ſtir the humours—but carry off none of their acrimony: — for my own part, I ſeldom ſwear or curſe at all — I hold it bad — but if I fall into it, by ſurprize, I generally retain ſo much preſence of mind (right quoth my uncle *Toby*) as to make it anſwer my purpoſe—that is, I ſwear on, till I find myſelf eaſy. A wiſe and a juſt man however would always endeavour to

proportion

proportion the vent given to theſe humours, not only to the degree of them ſtirring within himſelf—but to the ſize and ill intent of the offence upon which they are to fall,—"*Injuries come only from the heart*,"—quoth my uncle *Toby*. For this reaſon, continued my father, with the moſt *Cervantick* gravity, I have the greateſt veneration in the world for that gentleman, who, in diſtruſt of his own diſcretion in this point, ſat down and compoſed (that is at his leiſure) fit forms of ſwearing ſuitable to all caſes, from the loweſt to the higheſt provocations which could poſſibly happen to him,—which forms being well conſider'd by him, and ſuch moreover as he could ſtand to, he kept them ever by him on the chimney piece, within his reach, ready for uſe.——I never apprehended, replied Dr. *Slop*, that ſuch a thing was ever thought of,—much leſs executed. I beg your pardon—anſwered my father; I was reading, though not uſing, one of them to my brother *Toby* this morning, whilſt he pour'd out the tea—'tis here upon the ſhelf over my head;—but if I remember right, 'tis too violent for a cut of the thumb.——Not at all quoth Dr. *Slop*,——the devil take the fellow.—— Then anſwered my father, 'tis much at your ſervice, Dr. *Slop*—on condition you will read it aloud;—ſo riſing up and reaching down a form of excommunication of the church of *Rome*, a copy of which, my father (who was curious in his collections) had procured out of the leger-book of the church of *Rocheſter*, writ by ERNULPHUS the biſhop—with a moſt affected ſerioufneſs of look and voice, which might have cajoled ERNUL-

PHUS

PHUS himſelf,—he put it into Dr. *Slop*'s hands. —— Dr. *Slop* wrapt his thumb up in the corner of his handkerchief, and with a wry face, though without any ſuſpicion, read aloud, as follows,— my uncle *Toby* whiſtling *Lillabullero*, as loud as he could, all the time.

Textus de Eccleſiâ Roffenſi, per Ernulfum Epiſcopum.

CAP. XXV.

EXCOMMUNICATIO.

EX auctoritate Dei omnipotentis, Patris, et Filij, et ſpiritus Sancti, et ſanctorum canonum, ſanctæque et intemeratæ Virginis Dei genetricis Mariæ,

---

As the genuineneſs of the conſultation of the *Sorbonne*, upon the queſtion of baptiſm, was doubted by ſome, and denied by others, — 'twas thought proper to print the original of this excommunication; for the copy of which Mr. *Shandy* returns thanks to the chapter clerk of the dean and chapter of *Rocheſter*.

— Atque

CHAP. XI.

"BY the authority of God Almighty, the "Father, Son, and Holy Ghoſt, and of "the holy canons, and of the undefiled Virgin "*Mary*, mother and patroneſs of our Saviour." I think there is no neceſſity, quoth Dr. *Slop*, dropping the paper down to his knee, and addreſſing himſelf to my father,—as you have read it over, Sir, ſo lately, to read it aloud;—and as Captain *Shandy* ſeems to have no great inclination to hear it,—I may as well read it to myſelf. That's contrary to treaty, replied my father,—beſides, there is ſomething ſo whimſical, eſpecially in the latter part of it, I ſhould grieve to loſe the pleaſure of a ſecond reading. Dr. *Slop* did not altogether like it,—but my uncle *Toby* offering at that inſtant to give over whiſtling, and read it himſelf to them—Dr. *Slop* thought he might as well read it under the cover of my uncle *Toby*'s whiſtling,—as ſuffer my uncle *Toby* to read it alone;—ſo raiſing up the paper to his face, and holding it quite parallel to it, in order to hide his chagrin,—he read it aloud as follows,—my uncle *Toby* whiſtling Lillabullero, though not quite ſo loud as before.

"By

— Atque omnium cœleſtium virtutum, angelorum, archangelorum, thronorum, dominationum, poteſtatuum, cherubin ac ſeraphin, & ſanctorum patriarcharum, prophetarum, & omnium apoſtolorum et evangeliſtarum, & ſanctorum innocentum, qui in conſpectu Agni ſoli digni inventi ſunt canticum cantare novum, et ſanctorum martyrum, et ſanctorum confeſſorum, et ſanctarum virginum, atque omnium ſimul ſanctorum et electorum Dei, — Excommunicamus, et anathematizamus hunc furem, vel hunc malefactorem, N. N. et a liminibus ſanctæ Dei eccleſiæ ſequeſtramus et æternis ſuppliciis excruciandus, mancipetur, cum Dathan et Abiram, et cum his qui dixerunt Domino Deo, Recede à nobis, ſcientiam viarum tuarum nolumus: et ſicut aquâ ignis extinguitur, ſic extinguatur lucerna ejus in ſecula ſeculorum niſi reſpuerit, et ad ſatisfactionem venerit. Amen.

vel os s *vel* os

vel i n

vel eorum

n n

Maledicat illum Deus Pater qui hominem creavit. Maledicat illum Dei Filius qui pro homine paſſus eſt. Maledicat illum Spiritus Sanctus qui in baptiſmo effuſus eſt. Maledicat illum ſancta crux, quam Chriſtus pro noſtrâ ſalute hoſtem triumphans, aſcendit.

os os os os

Maledicat

" By the authority of God Almighty, the " Father, Son, and Holy Ghoſt, and of the " undefiled Virgin *Mary*, mother and patroneſs " of our Saviour, and of all the celeſtial vir- " tues, angels, archangels, thrones, domi- " nions, powers, cherubins and ſeraphins, and " of all the holy patriarchs, prophets, and of " all the apoſtles and evangeliſts, and of the ho- " ly innocents, who in the ſight of the holy " Lamb, are found worthy to ſing the new ſong " of the holy martyrs and holy confeſſors, and " of the holy virgins, and of all the ſaints to- " gether with the holy and elect of God.— " May he," *(Obadiah)* " be damn'd," (for tying theſe knots)——" We excommunicate, " and anathematiſe him, and from the thre- " ſholds of the holy church of God Almighty " we ſequeſter him, that he may be tormented, " diſpoſed and delivered over with *Dathan* and " *Abiram*, and with thoſe who ſay unto the " Lord God, Depart from us, we deſire none " of thy ways. And as fire is quenched with " water, ſo let the light of him be put out for " evermore, unleſs it ſhall repent him" (Oba- diah of the knots which he has tied) " and " make ſatisfaction" (for them.) " Amen."

" May the Father who created man, curſe " him.———May the Son who ſuffered for " us, curſe him. ——— May the Holy Ghoſt " who was given to us in baptiſm, curſe him " (Obadiah.) —— May the holy croſs, which " Chriſt for our ſalvation triumphing over his " enemies aſcended,— curſe him.

" May

os

Maledicat illum ſancta Dei genetrix et perpe-

os

tua Virgo Maria. Maledicat illum ſanctus Michael, animarum ſuſceptor ſacrarum. Maledi-

os

cant illum omnes angeli et archangeli, principatus et poteſtates, omniſque militia cœleſtis.

os

Maledicat illum patriarcharum et prophetarum

os

laudabilis numerus. Maledicat illum ſanctus Johannes præcurſor et Baptiſta Chriſti, et ſanctus Petrus, et ſanctus Paulus, atque ſanctus Andreas, omneſque Chriſti apoſtoli, ſimul et cæteri diſcipuli, quatuor quoque evangeliſtæ, qui ſua prædicatione mundum univerſum con-

os

verterunt. Maledicat illum cuneus martyrum et confeſſorum mirificus, qui Deo bonis operibus placitus inventus eſt.

os

Maledicant illum ſacrarum virginum chori, quæ mundi vana cauſa honoris Chriſti reſpuen-

os

da contempſerunt. Maledicant illum omnes ſancti qui ab initio mundi uſque in finem ſeculi Deo dilecti inveniuntur.

os

Maledicant illum cœli et terra, et omnia ſancta in eis manentia.

n n

Maledictus ſit ubicunque fuerit, ſive in domo, ſive in agro, ſive in viâ, ſive in ſemitâ, ſive in ſilvâ, ſive in aquâ, ſive in eccleſiâ.

Maledictus ſit vivendo, moriendo, —

" May the holy and eternal *Virgin Mary*, " mother of God, curſe him. — May St. *Mi-* " *chael* the advocate of holy ſouls, curſe him. " — May all the angels and archangels, prin- " cipalities and powers, and all the heavenly " armies, curſe him." [Our armies ſwore ter- ribly in *Flanders*, cried my uncle *Toby* — but no- thing to this. — For my own part, I could not have a heart to curſe my dog ſo.]

" May St. John the precurſor, and St. John " the Baptiſt, and St. Peter and St. Paul, and " St. Andrew, and all other Chriſt's apoſtles, " together curſe him. And may the reſt of his " diſciples and four evangeliſts, who by their " preaching converted the univerſal world, — " and may the holy and wonderful company of " martyrs and confeſſors, who by their holy " works are found pleaſing to God Almighty, " curſe him (Obadiah.)

" May the holy choir of the holy virgins, " who for the honour of Chriſt have deſpiſed " the things of the world, damn him. — May " all the ſaints who from the beginning of the " world to everlaſting ages are found to be be- " loved of God, damn him. — May the heavens " and earth, and all the holy things remaining " therein, damn him," (Obadiah) " or her," (or whoever elſe had a hand in tying theſe knots.)

" May he (Obadiah) be damn'd wherever " he be, — whether in the houſe or the ſtables, " the garden or the field, or the highway, or in " the path, or in the wood, or in the water, " or in the church. — May he be curſed in liv-

" ing,

— — — — —
— — — — —
— — — — —
— — — — —
— — — — —
— — — — —

manducando, bibendo, eſuriendo, ſitiendo, jejunando, dormitando, dormiendo, vigilando, ambulando, ſtando, ſedendo, jacendo, operando, quieſcendo, mingendo, cacando, flebotomando.

Maledictus ſit in totis viribus corporis.

Maledictus ſit intus et exterius.

Maledictus ſit in capilis; maledictus ſit in cerebro. Maledictus ſit in vertice, in temporibus, in fronte, in auriculis, in ſuperciliis, in oculis, in genis, in maxillis, in naribus, in dentibus, mordacibus, in labris ſive molibus, in labiis, in gutture, in humeris, in carnis, in brachiis, in manubus, in digitis, in pectore, in corde, et in omnibus interioribus ſtomacho tenus, in renibus, in inguinibus, in femore, in genitalibus, in coxis, in genubus, in cruribus, in pedibus, et in unguibus.

Maledictus ſit in totis compagibus membrorum, a vertice capitis, uſque ad plantam pedis— non ſit in eo ſanitas.

Maledicat

" ing, in dying." [Here my uncle *Toby* taking the advantage of a *minim* in the ſecond barr of his tune, kept whiſtling one continual note to the end of the ſentence—Dr. *Slop* with his diviſion of curſes moving under him, like a running baſs all the way.] " May he be curſed in eating and drinking, in being hungry, in being " thirſty, in faſting, in ſleeping, in ſlumbering, " in walking, in ſtanding, in ſitting, in lying, " in working, in reſting, in piſſing, in ſhitting, " and in blood-letting."

" May he (Obadiah) be curſed in all the faculties of his body.

" May he be curſed inwardly and outwardly. " — May he be curſed in the hair of his head.— " May he be curſed in his brains, and in his " vertex," (that is a ſad curſe, quoth my father) " in his temples, in his forehead, in his ears, " in his eye-brows, in his eyes, in his cheeks, " in his jaw-bones, in his noſtrils, in his fore- " teeth and grinders, in his lips, in his throat, " in his ſhoulders, in his wriſts, in his arms, " in his hands, in his fingers.

" May he be damn'd in his mouth, in his " breaſt, in his heart and purtenance, down to " the very ſtomach.

" May he be curſed in his reins, and in his " groin," (God in heaven forbid, quoth my " uncle *Toby*) — " in his thighs, in his geni- " tals, (my father ſhook his head) " and in " his hips, and in his knees, his legs, and " feet, and toe-nails.

" May he be curſed in all the joints and ar- " ticulations of his members, from the top of " his head to the ſoal of his foot, may there be " no ſoundneſs in him.

" May

Maledicat illum Chriſtus Filius Dei vivi toto ſuæ majeſtatis imperio.

—et inſurgat adverſus illum cœlum cum omnibus virtutibus quæ in eo moventur ad *damnandum* eum, niſi penituerit et ad ſatisfactionem venerit. Amen. Fiat, fiat, Amen.

" May the Son of the living God, with all " the glory of his Majeſty" —— [Here my uncle *Toby* throwing back his head, gave a monſtrous, long, loud Whew — w — w, ſomething betwixt the interjectional whiſtle of *Hey day!* and the word itſelf. —

——— By the golden beard of *Jupiter* — and of *Juno*, (if her majeſty wore one), and by the beards of the reſt of your heathen worſhips, which by the bye was no ſmall number, ſince what with the beards of your celeſtial gods, and gods aerial and acquatick, — to ſay nothing of the beards of town gods and country-gods, or of the celeſtial goddeſſes your wives, or of the infernal goddeſſes your whores and concubines, (that is in caſe they wore 'em ——— all which beards, as *Varro* tells me, upon his word and honour, when muſtered up together, made no leſs than thirty thouſand effective beards upon the pagan eſtabliſhment; ——— every beard of which claimed the rights and privileges of being ſtroked and ſworn by, — by all theſe beards together then, — I vow and proteſt, that of the two bad caſſocks I am worth in the world, I would have given the better of them, as freely as ever *Cid Hamet* offered his, — only to have ſtood by, and heard my uncle *Toby*'s accompanyment.]

——— " Curſe him," —— continued Dr. *Slop*, — " and may heaven with all the powers " which move therein, riſe up againſt him, " curſe and damn him (Obadiah) unleſs he " repent and make ſatisfaction. Amen. So be " it, — ſo be it. Amen."

I declare,

I declare, quoth my uncle *Toby*, my heart would not let me curſe the devil himſelf with ſo much bitterneſs.——— He is the father of curſes, replied Dr. *Slop* —— So am not I, replied my uncle.——— But he is curſed, and damn'd already, to all eternity,— replied Dr. *Slop*.

I am ſorry for it, quoth my uncle *Toby*.

Dr. *Slop* drew up his mouth, and was juſt beginning to return my uncle *Toby* the compliment of his Whu—u—u— or interjectional whiſtle, — when the door haſtily opening in the next chapter but one — put an end to the affair.

CHAP. XII.

NOW don't let us give ourſelves a parcel of airs, and pretend that the oaths we make free with in this land of liberty of ours are our own; and becauſe we have the ſpirit to ſwear them, — imagine that we have had the wit to invent them too.

I'll undertake this moment to prove it to any man in the world, except to a connoiſſeur; — though I declare I object only to a connoiſſeur in ſwearing,—as I would do to a connoiſſeur in painting, &c. &c. the whole ſet of 'em are ſo hung round and *befetiſh'd* with the bobs and trinkets of criticiſm— or to drop my metaphor, which by the bye is a pity,— for I have fetch'd it as far as from the coaſt of *Guinea*; —— their heads, Sir, are ſtuck ſo full of rules and compaſſes, and have that eternal propenſity to apply them upon all occaſions, that a work of genius had

had better go to the devil at once, than ſtand to be prick'd and tortured to death by 'em.

——— And how did *Garrick* ſpeak the ſoliloquy laſt night? — Oh, againſt all rule, my Lord, — moſt ungrammatically! betwixt the ſubſtantive and the adjective, which ſhould agree together in *number*, *caſe* and *gender*, he made a breach thus, —— ſtopping, as if the point wanted ſettling; — and betwixt the nominative caſe, which your lordſhip knows ſhould govern the verb, he ſuſpended his voice in the epilogue a dozen times, three ſeconds and three fifths by a ſtop-watch, my Lord, each time.— Admirable grammarian —— But in ſuſpending his voice — was the ſenſe ſuſpended likewiſe? Did no expreſſion of attitude or countenance fill up the chaſm? —— Was the eye ſilent? Did you narrowly look? —— I look'd only at the ſtop-watch, my Lord — Excellent obſerver!

And what of this new book the whole world makes ſuch a rout about; ——— Oh! 'tis out of all plumb, my Lord, —— quite an irregular thing! — not one of the angles at the four corners was a right angle. ——— I had my rule and compaſſes, &c. my Lord, in my pocket. — Excellent critic!

——— And for the epick poem, your lordſhip bid me look at; — upon taking the length, breadth, height, and depth of it, and trying them at home upon an exact ſcale of *Boſſu*'s, — 'tis out, my Lord, in every one of its dimenſions.——Admirable connoiſſeur!

And did you ſtep in, to take a look at the grand picture, in your way back. —— 'Tis a melancholy daub! my Lord; not one princi-

ple of the *pyramid* in any one group! —— and what a price! —— for there is nothing of the colouring of *Titian* — the expreſſion of *Rubens*, —the grace of *Raphael*, — the purity of *Domini-chino*, —the *corregieſcity* of *Corregio*, —the learning of *Pouſin*, — the airs of *Guido*, — the taſte of the *Carrachi's* — or the grand contour of *Angelo*. ——— Grant me patience, juſt heaven! —— Of all the cants which are canted in this canting world, —though the cant of hypocrites may be the worſt, — the cant of criticiſm is the moſt tormenting!

I would go fifty miles on foot, for I have not a horſe worth riding on, to kiſs the hand of that man whoſe generous heart will give up the reins of his imagination into his author's hands, —— be pleaſed he knows not why, and cares not wherefore.

Great *Apollo!* if thou art in a giving humour, — give me — I aſk no more, but one ſtroke of native humour, with a ſingle ſpark of thy own fire along with it —— and ſend *Mercury*, with the *rules and compaſſes*, if he can be ſpared, with my compliments to ——— no matter.

Now to any one elſe, I will undertake to prove, that all the oaths and imprecations, which we have been puffing off upon the world for theſe two hundred and fifty years laſt paſt, as originals, —— except St. *Paul's thumb*, — *God's fleſh and God's fiſh*, which were oaths monarchical, and, conſidering who made them, not much amiſs; and as kings oaths, 'tis not much matter whether they were fiſh or fleſh; — elſe, I ſay, there is not an oath, or at leaſt a curſe amongſt them, which has not been copied over and over again out of *Ernulphus*, a thou-

ſand

ſand times: but, like all other copies, how infinitely ſhort of the force and ſpirit of the original! ——— It is thought to be no bad oath, ——and by itſelf paſſes very well —— "*G—d damn you.*" —— Set it beſide *Ernulphus*'s —— "God Almighty the Father damn you — God the Son damn you, —— God the Holy Ghoſt damn you," — you ſee 'tis nothing. ——— There is an orientality in his, we cannot riſe up to: beſides, he is more copious in his invention, — poſſeſs'd more of the excellencies of a ſwearer, — had ſuch a thorough knowledge of the human frame, its membranes, nerves, ligaments, knittings of the joints, and articulations, — that when *Ernulphus* curſed, no part eſcaped him. — 'Tis true, there is ſomething of a *hardneſs* in his manner, — and, as in *Michael Angelo*, a want of *grace*, — but then there is ſuch a greatneſs of *guſto!*—

My father, who generally look'd upon every thing in a light very different from all mankind, — would, after all, never allow this to be an original. — He conſider'd rather *Ernulphus*'s anathema, as an inſtitute of ſwearing, in which, as he ſuſpected, upon the decline of *ſwearing* in ſome milder pontificate, *Ernulphus*, by order of the ſucceeding pope, had with great learning and diligence collected together all the laws of it; — for the ſame reaſon that *Juſtinian*, in the decline of the empire, had ordered his chancellor *Trebonian* to collect the *Roman* or civil laws all together into one code or digeſt,—leſt through the ruſt of time,—and the fatality of all things committed to oral tradition, they ſhould be loſt to the world for ever.

For this reaſon my father would ofttimes affirm, there was not an oath, from the great and tremendous oath of *William* the Conqueror, *(By the ſplendour of God)* down to the loweſt oath of a ſcavenger, *(Damn your eyes)* which was not to be found in *Ernulphus*. ——— In ſhort, he would add, — I defy a man to ſwear *out* of it.

The hypotheſis is, like moſt of my father's, ſingular and ingenious too; ——— nor have I any objection to it, but that it overturns my own.

CHAP. XIII.

——BLESS my ſoul! —— my poor miſtreſs is ready to faint, —— and her pains are gone, — and the drops are done — and the bottle of julap is broke, — and the nurſe has cut her arm, — (and I, my thumb, cried Dr. *Slop)* and the child is where it was, continued *Suſannah*, — and the midwife has fallen backwards upon the edge of the fender, and bruiſed her hip as black as your hat, — I'll look at it, quoth Dr. *Slop*. —— There is no need of that, replied *Suſannah*, — you had better look at my miſtreſs, — but the midwife would gladly firſt give you an account how things are, ſo deſires you would go up ſtairs and ſpeak to her this moment.

Human nature is the ſame in all profeſſions.

The midwife had juſt before been put over Dr. *Slop*'s head. —— He had not digeſted it. No, — replied Dr. *Slop*, 'twould be full as proper, if the midwife came down to me —— I like

like ſubordination, quoth my uncle *Toby*,—and but for it, after the reduction of *Liſle*, I know not what might have become of the garriſon of *Ghent*, in the mutiny for bread, in the year Ten —Nor, replied Dr. *Slop*, (parodying my uncle *Toby*'s hobby-horſical reflection, though full as hobby-horſically himſelf)—do I know, Captain *Shandy*, what might have become of the garriſon above ſtairs, in the mutiny and confuſion I find all things are in at preſent, but for the ſubordination of fingers and thumbs to * * * * —the application of which, Sir, under this accident of mine, comes in ſo *a propos*, that without it, the cut upon my thumb might have been felt by the *Shandy* family, as long as the *Shandy* family had a name.

CHAP. XIV.

LET us go back to the * * * *—in the laſt chapter.

It is a ſingular ſtroke of eloquence (at leaſt it was ſo, when eloquence flouriſhed at *Athens* and *Rome*, and would be ſo now, did orators wear mantles) not to mention the name of a thing, when you had the thing about you, *in petto*, ready to produce, pop, in the place you want it. A ſcar, an axe, a ſword, a pink'd-doublet, a ruſty helmet, a pound and an half of pot-aſhes in an urn, or a three-halfpenny pickle pot, —but above all a tender infant royally accoutred.—Tho' if it was too young, and the oration as long as *Tully*'s ſecond *Philippick*,—it muſt certainly have beſhit the orator's mantle.

And then again, if too old,—it muſt have been

unwieldy and incommodious to his action, — ſo as to make him loſe by his child almoſt as much as he could gain by it. ——— Otherwiſe, when a ſtate orator has hit the preciſe age to a minute — hid his BAMBINO in his mantle ſo cunningly, that no mortal could ſmell it, — and produced it ſo critically, that no ſoul could ſay, it came in by head and ſhoulders,—Oh, Sirs! it has done wonders. ——— It has open'd the ſluices, and turn'd the brains, and ſhook the principles, and unhinged the politicks of half a nation.

Theſe feats however are not to be done, except in thoſe ſtates and times, I ſay, where orators wore mantles, — and pretty large ones too, my brethren, with ſome twenty or five and twenty yards of good purple, ſuperfine, marketable cloth in them — with large flowing folds and doubles, and in a great ſtile of deſign — All which plainly ſhews, may it pleaſe your worſhips, that the decay of eloquence, and the little good ſervice it does at preſent, both within and without doors, is owing to nothing elſe in the world, but ſhort coats, and the diſuſe of *trunk-hoſe*. — We can conceal nothing under ours, Madam, worth ſhewing.

CHAP. XV.

DR. *Slop* was within an ace of being an exception to all this argumentation: for happening to have his green bays bag upon his knees when he began to parody my uncle *Toby*, —'twas as good as the beſt mantle in the world to him: for which purpoſe, when he foreſaw the ſentence

ſentence would end in his new invented *forceps*, he thruſt his hand into the bag in order to have them ready to clap in, where your reverences took ſo much notice of the ****, which, had he managed — my uncle *Toby* had certainly been overthrown: the ſentence and the argument in that caſe jumping cloſely in one point, ſo like the two lines which form the ſalient angle of a raveline,—Dr. *Slop* would never have given them up;—and my uncle *Toby* would as ſoon thought of flying, as taking them by force: but Dr. *Slop* fumbled ſo vilely in pulling them out, it took off the whole effect, and what was a ten times worſe evil (for they ſeldom come alone in this life) in pulling out his *forceps*, his *forceps* unfortunately drew out the *ſquirt* along with it.

When a propoſition can be taken in two ſenſes, —'tis a law in diſputation, that the reſpondent may reply to which of the two he pleaſes, or finds moſt convenient for him.— This threw the advantage of the argument quite on my uncle *Toby*'s ſide. — "*Good God!*" cried my uncle *Toby*, "*are children brought into the world* "*with a ſquirt?*"

CHAP. XVI.

—UPON my honour, Sir, you have tore every bit of the ſkin quite off the back of both my hands with your forceps, cried my uncle *Toby*, — and you have cruſh'd all my knuckles into the bargain with them, to a jelly. 'Tis your own fault, ſaid Dr. *Slop*. —— you ſhould have clinch'd your two fiſts together into the form of a child's, head, as I told you,

and ſat firm. —— I did ſo anſwered my uncle *Toby*. — Then the points of my forceps have not been ſufficiently arm'd, or the rivet wants cloſing—or elſe the cut on my thumb has made me a little aukward, — or poſſibly — 'Tis well, quoth my father, interrupting the detail of poſſibilities, — that the experiment was not firſt made upon my child's head-piece. — It would not have been a cherry ſtone the worſe, anſwered Dr. *Slop*. I maintain it, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, it would have broke the cerebellum, (unleſs indeed the ſkull had been as hard as a granado) and turned it all into a perfect poſſet. Pſhaw! replied Dr. *Slop*, a child's head is naturally as ſoft as the pap of an apple; — the ſutures give way, — and beſides, I could have extracted by the feet after. —— Not you, ſaid ſhe, — I rather wiſh you would begin that way, quoth my father.

Pray do, added my uncle *Toby*.

CHAP. XVII.

—— AND pray, good woman, after all, will you take upon you to ſay, it may not be the child's hip, as well as the child's head? — 'Tis moſt certainly the head, replied the midwife. Becauſe, continued Dr. *Slop*, (turning to my father) as poſitive as theſe old ladies generally are, — 'tis a point very difficult to know, — and yet of the greateſt conſequence to be known; — becauſe, Sir, if the hip is miſtaken for the head, — there is a poſſibility (if it is a boy) that the forceps * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

— What

— What the poſſibility was, Dr. *Slop* whiſpered very low to my father, and then to my uncle *Toby*. — There is no ſuch danger, continued he, with the head. — No, in truth, quoth my father, —— but when your poſſibility has taken place at the hip, — you may as well take off the head too.

— It is morally impoſſible the reader ſhould underſtand this, — 'tis enough Dr. *Slop* underſtood it; — ſo taking the green bays bag in his hand, with the help of *Obadiah*'s pumps, he tripp'd pretty nimbly, for a man of his ſize, acroſs the room to the door, — and from the door was ſhewn the way, by the good old midwife, to my mother's apartment.

CHAP. XVIII.

IT is two hours and ten minutes, — and no more, — cried my father, looking at his watch, ſince Dr. *Slop* and *Obadiah* arrived, — and I know not how it happens, brother *Toby* — but to my imagination it ſeems almoſt an age.

— Here — pray, Sir, take hold of my cap, — nay, take the bell along with it, and my pantoufles too. —

Now, Sir, they are all at your ſervice; and I freely make you a preſent of them, on condition you give me all your attention to this chapter.

Though my father ſaid, "*he knew not how* "*it happen'd*," — yet he knew very well how it happen'd; — and at the inſtant he ſpoke it, was predetermined in his mind, to give my uncle *Toby* a clear account of the matter by a metaphyſical diſſertation upon the ſubject of *duration*

and its ſimple modes, in order to ſhew my uncle *Toby*, by what mechaniſm and menſurations in the brain it came to paſs, that the rapid ſucceſſion of their ideas, and the eternal ſcampering of diſcourſe from one thing to another, ſince Dr. *Slop* had came into the room, had lengthened out ſo ſhort a period, to ſo inconceivable an extent. — "I know not how it happens," — cried my father — "but it ſeems an age."

— 'Tis owing, entirely, quoth my uncle *Toby*, to the ſucceſſion of our ideas.

My father, who had an itch in common with all philoſophers, of reaſoning upon every thing which happened, and accounting for it too, — propoſed infinite pleaſure to himſelf in this, of the ſucceſſion of ideas, and had not the leaſt apprehenſion of having it ſnatch'd out of his hands by my uncle *Toby*, who (honeſt man!) generally took every thing as it happened; — and who, of all men in the world, troubled his brain the leaſt with abtruſe thinking; — the ideas of time and ſpace, — or how we came by thoſe ideas, — or of what ſtuff they were made, — or whether they were born with us, — or we pick'd them up afterwards as we went along, — or whether we did it in frocks, — or not till we had got into breeches, — with a thouſand other inquiries and diſputes about INFINITY, PRESCIENCE, LIBERTY, NECESSITY, and ſo forth, upon whoſe deſperate and unconquerable theories, ſo many fine heads have been turned and crack'd, — never did my uncle *Toby*'s the leaſt injury at all; my father knew it, — and was no leſs ſurprized, than he was diſappointed with my uncle's fortuitous ſolution.

Do

Do you underſtand the theory of that affair? replied my father.

Not I quoth my uncle.

— But you have ſome ideas, ſaid my father, of what you talk about. —

No more than my horſe, replied my uncle *Toby*.

Gracious heaven! cried my father, looking upwards, and claſping his two hands together, — there is a worth in thy honeſt ignorance, brother *Toby*,—'twere almoſt a pity to exchange it for a knowledge. — But I'll tell thee.

To underſtand what *time* is aright, without which we never can comprehend *infinity*, inſomuch as one is a portion of the other, — we ought ſeriouſly to ſit down and conſider what idea it is we have of *duration*, ſo as to give a ſatisfactory account, how we came by it. — What is that to any body? quoth my uncle *Toby*. * *For if you will turn your eyes inwards upon your mind*, continued my father, *and obſerve attentively, you will perceive, brother, that whilſt you and I are talking together, and thinking and ſmoaking our pipes: or whilſt we receive ſucceſſively ideas in our minds, we know that we do exiſt, and ſo we eſtimate the exiſtence, or the continuation of the exiſtence of ourſelves, or any thing elſe commenſurate to the ſucceſſion of any ideas in our minds, the duration of ourſelves, or any ſuch other thing co-exiſting with our thinking,—and ſo according to that preconceived*—You puzzle me to death, cried my uncle *Toby*.—

—'Tis owing to this, replied my father, that in our computation of *time*, we are ſo uſed to minutes, hours, weeks, and months, — and of clocks

* Vid. Locke.

clocks (I wiſh there was not a clock in the kingdom) to meaſure out their ſeveral portions to us, and to thoſe who belong to us,— that 'twill be well, if in time to come the *ſucceſſion of our ideas* be of any uſe or ſervice to us at all.

Now, whether we obſerve it or no, continued my father, in every ſound man's head, there is a regular ſucceſſion of ideas of one ſort or other, which follow each other in train juſt like — A train of artillery? ſaid my uncle *Toby*. — A train of a fiddle-ſtick! — quoth my father — which follow and ſucceed one another in our minds at certain diſtances, juſt like the images in the inſide of a lantern turned round by the heat of a candle.—I declare, quoth my uncle *Toby*, mine are like a ſmoak-jack. — Then, brother *Toby*, I have nothing more to ſay to you upon the ſubject, ſaid my father.

CHAP. XIX.

—WHAT a conjuncture was here loſt! — My father in one of his beſt explanatory moods, — in eager purſuit of a metaphyſical point into the very regions where clouds and thick darkneſs would ſoon have encompaſſed it about;—my uncle *Toby*, in one of the fineſt diſpoſitions for it in the world; — his head like a ſmoak-jack;—the funnel unſwept, and the ideas whirling round and round about in it, all obſcured and darkened over with fuliginous matter! — By the tomb-ſtone of *Lucian* — if it is in being,—if not, why then by his aſhes! by the aſhes of my dear *Rabelais*, and dearer *Cervantes*,—my father and my uncle *Toby*'s diſcourſe

courſe upon TIME and ETERNITY,—was a diſcourſe devoutly to be wiſhed for! and the petulancy of my father's humour in putting a ſtop to it, as he did, was a robbery of the *Ontologic treaſury*, of ſuch a jewel, as no coalition of great occaſions and great men, are ever likely to reſtore to it again.

CHAP. XX.

THO' my father perſiſted in not going on with the diſcourſe,—yet he could not get my uncle *Toby*'s ſmoak-jack out of his head,—piqued as he was at firſt with it;—there was ſomething in the compariſon at the bottom, which hit his fancy; for which purpoſe reſting his elbow upon the table, and reclining the right ſide of his head upon the palm of his hand,—but looking firſt ſtedfaſtly in the fire,—he began to commune with himſelf and philoſophize about it: but his ſpirits being wore out with the fatigues of inveſtigating new tracts, and the conſtant exertion of his faculties upon that variety of ſubjects which had taken their turn in the diſcourſe,—the idea of the ſmoak-jack ſoon turned all his ideas upſide down,—ſo that he fell aſleep almoſt before he knew what he was about.

As for my uncle *Toby*, his ſmoak-jack had not made a dozen revolutions, before he fell aſleep alſo.—Peace be with them both—Dr. *Slop* is engaged with the midwife, and my mother above ſtairs.—*Trim* is buſy in turning an old pair of jack-boots into a couple of mortars

to

to be employed in the ſiege of *Meſſina* next ſummer, — and in this inſtant boring the touch-holes with the point of a hot poker. — All my heroes are off my hands; — 'tis the firſt time I have had a moment to ſpare, and I'll make uſe of it and write my preface.

THE

THE AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

NO, I'll not ſay a word about it,—here it is;—in publiſhing it,—I have appealed to the world,—and to the world I leave it;—it muſt ſpeak for itſelf.

All I know of the matter is—when I ſat down, my intent was to write a good book; and as far as the tenuity of my underſtanding would hold out,—a wiſe, aye, and a diſcreet,—taking care only, as I went along, to put into it all the wit and the judgment (be it more or leſs) which the great author and beſtower of them had thought fit originally to give me.——ſo that, as your worſhips ſee,—'tis juſt as God pleaſes.

Now *Agalaſtes* (ſpeaking diſpraiſingly) ſayeth, That there may be ſome wit in it, for aught he knows,—but no judgment at all. And *Triptolemus* and *Phutatorius* agreeing thereto, aſk, How is it poſſible there ſhould? for that wit and judgment in this world never go together; inaſmuch as they are two operations differing from each other as wide as eaſt is from weſt.——So ſays *Locke*,—ſo are farting and hickuping, ſay I. But in anſwer to this, *Didius* the great church lawyer, in his code *de fartandi et illuſtrandi fallaciis*, doth maintain and make fully appear, That an illuſtration is no argument,—nor do I maintain the wiping of a looking-glaſs clean, to be a ſyllogiſm;—but you all, may it pleaſe

pleaſe your worſhips, ſee the better for it,—ſo that the main good theſe things do, is only to clarify the underſtanding, previous to the application of the argument itſelf, in order to free it from any little motes, or ſpecks of opacular matter, which, if left ſwimming therein, might hinder a conception and ſpoil all.

Now my dear Anti-Shandeans, and thrice able critics, and fellow-labourers, (for to you I write this Preface)—and to you moſt ſubtle ſtateſmen and diſcreet doctors (do—pull off your beards) renowned for gravity and wiſdom;——*Monopolos*, my politician;—*Didius*, my counſel;—*Kyſarcius*, my friend:—*Phutatorius*, my guide;—*Gaſtripheres*, the preſerver of my life;—*Somnolentius*, the balm and repoſe of it,—not forgetting all others as well as ſleeping as waking,—eccleſiaſtical as civil, whom for brevity, but out of no reſentment to you, I lump all together.—Believe me, right worthy,

My moſt zealous wiſh and fervent prayer in your behalf, and in my own too, in caſe the thing is not done already for us,—is, that the great gifts and endowments, both of wit and judgment, with every thing which uſually goes along with them,—ſuch as memory, fancy, genius, eloquence, quick parts, and what not, may this precious moment without ſtint or meaſure, let or hindrance, be poured down warm as each of us could bear it,—ſcum and ſediment and all, (for I would not have a drop loſt) into theſe veral receptacles, cells, cellules, domiciles, dormitories, refectories, and ſpare places of our brains,—in ſuch ſort, that they might continue to be injected and tunn'd into, according to the true intent and meaning of my wiſh, until

til every veſſel of them, both great and ſmall, be ſo repleniſhed, ſaturated, and fill'd up therewith, that no more, would it ſave a man's life, could poſſibly be got either in or out.

Bleſs us!—what noble work we ſhould make!—how ſhould I tickle it off!—and what ſpirits ſhould I find myſelf in, to be writing away for ſuch readers!—and you,—juſt heaven!—with what raptures would you ſit and read,—but oh!—'tis too much,—I am ſick,—I faint away deliciouſly at the thoughts of it!—'tis more than nature can bear!—lay hold of me,—I am giddy,—I am ſtone blind,—I'm dying,—I am gone.——Help! Help! Help!——But hold,—I grow ſomething better again, for I am beginning to foreſee, when this is over, that as we ſhall all of us continue to be great wits,—we ſhould never agree amongſt ourſelves, one day to an end:—there would be ſo much ſatire and ſarcaſm,—ſcoffing and flouting, with raillying and reparteeing of it,—thruſting and parrying in one corner or another, there would be nothing but miſchief amongſt us.——Chaſte ſtars! what biting and ſcratching, and what a racket and a clatter we ſhould make, what with breaking of heads and rapping of knuckles, and hitting of ſore places,—there would be no ſuch thing as living for us.

But then again, as we ſhould all of us be men of great judgment, we ſhould make up matters as faſt as ever they went wrong; and though we ſhould abominate each other, ten times worſe than ſo many devils or devileſſes, we ſhould nevertheleſs, my dear creatures, be all courteſy and kindneſs,—milk and honey,——'twould be a ſecond land of promiſe,—a paradiſe

paradiſe upon earth, if there was ſuch a thing to be had,—ſo that upon the whole we ſhould have done well enough.

All I fret and fume at, and what moſt diſtreſſes my invention at preſent, is, how to bring the point itſelf to bear; for as your worſhips well know, that of theſe heavenly emanations of *wit* and *judgment*, which I have ſo bountifully wiſhed both for your worſhips and myſelf,—there is but a certain *quantum* ſtored up for us all, for the uſe and behoof of the whole race of mankind; and ſuch ſmall *modicums* of 'em are only ſent forth into this wide world, circulating here and there in one bye corner or another,—and in ſuch narrow ſtreams, and at ſuch prodigious intervals from each other, that one would wonder how it holds out, or could be ſufficient for the wants and emergencies of ſo many great ſtates and populous empires.

Indeed there is one thing to be conſidered, that in *Nova Zembla*, *North Lapland*, and in all thoſe cold and dreary tracks of the globe, which lie more directly under the arctick and antarctick circles,—where the whole province of a man's concernments lies for near nine months together, within the narrow compaſs of his cave,—where the ſpirits are compreſſed almoſt to nothing,—and where the paſſions of a man are as frigid as the zone itſelf;——there the leaſt quantity of *judgment* imaginable does the buſineſs,—and of *wit*,—there is a total and an abſolute ſaving,—for as not one ſpark is wanted,—ſo not one ſpark is given. Angels and miniſters of grace defend us! What a diſmal thing would it have been to have governed a kingdom, to have fought a battle, or made a treaty,

or

or run a match, or wrote a book, or got a child, or held a provincial chapter there, with ſo *plentiful a lack* of wit and judgment about us! for mercy's ſake! let us think no more about it, but travel on as faſt as we can ſouthwards into *Norway*, — croſſing over *Swedeland*, if you pleaſe, through the ſmall triangular province of *Angermania* to the lake of *Bothnia*, coaſting along it through eaſt and weſt *Bothnia* down to *Carelia*, and ſo on, through all thoſe ſtates and provinces which border upon the far ſide of the *Gulf* of *Finland*, and the north eaſt of the *Baltic*, up to *Peterſburg*, and juſt ſtepping into *Ingria*; —— then ſtretching over directly from thence through the north parts of the *Ruſſian* empire — leaving *Siberia* a little upon the left hand, till we get into the very heart of *Ruſſian* and *Aſiatick Tartary*.

Now throughout this long tour which I have led you, you obſerve the good people are better off by far, than in the polar countries which we have juſt left: — for if you hold your hand over your eyes, and look very attentively, you may perceive ſome ſmall glimmerings (as it were) of wit, with a comfortable proviſion of good plain *houſhold* judgment, which taking the quality and quantity of it together, they make a very good ſhift with, ——and had they more of either the one or the other, it would deſtroy the proper balance betwixt them, and I am ſatisfied moreover they would want occaſions to put them to uſe.

Now, Sir, if I conduct you home again into this warmer and more luxuriant iſland, where you perceive the ſpring tide of our blood and humours run high — where we have more ambi-

tion,

tion, and pride, and envy, and lechery, and other whoreſon paſſions upon our hands to govern and ſubject to reaſon,—the *height* of our wit and the *depth* of our judgment, you ſee are exactly proportioned to the *length* and *breadth* of our neceſſities,—and accordingly, we have them ſent down amongſt us in ſuch a flowing kind of decent and creditable plenty, that no one thinks he has any cauſe to complain.

It muſt however be confeſſed on this head, that, as our air blows hot and cold,—— wet and dry, ten times in a day, we have them in no regular and ſettled way;——ſo that ſometimes for near half a century together, there ſhall be very little wit or judgment, either to be ſeen or heard of amongſt us:——the ſmall channels of them ſhall ſeem quite dried up,—— then all of a ſudden the ſluices ſhall break out, and take a fit of running again like fury,—you would think they would never ſtop:——and then it is, that in writing and fighting, and twenty other gallant things, we drive all the world before us.

It is by theſe obſervations, and a wary reaſoning by analogy in that kind of argumentative proceſs, which *Suidas* calls *dialectick induction*, —that I draw and ſet up this poſition as moſt true and veritable.

That of theſe two luminaries, ſo much of their irradiations are ſuffered from time to time to ſhine down upon us; as he, whoſe infinite wiſdom which diſpenſes every thing in exact weight and meaſure, knows will juſt ſerve to light us on our way in this night of our obſcurity; ſo that your reverences and worſhips now find out, nor is it a moment longer in my power

to

to conceal it from you, that the fervent wiſh in your behalf with which I ſet out, was no more than the firſt inſinuating *How d'ye* of a careſſing prefacer ſtifling his reader, as a lover ſometimes does a coy miſtreſs into ſilence. For alas! could this effuſion of light have been as eaſily procured, as the exordium wiſhed it —— I tremble to think how many thouſands for it, of benighted travellers (in the learned ſciences at leaſt) muſt have groped and blundered on in the dark, all the nights of their lives,—running their heads againſt poſts, and knocking out their brains without ever getting to their journies end; —— ſome falling with their noſes perpendicularly into ſtinks, — others horizontally with their tails into kennels. Here one half of a learned profeſſion tilting full butt againſt the other half of it, and then tumbling and rolling one over the other in the dirt like hogs. ——— Here the brethren, of another profeſſion, who ſhould have run in oppoſition to each other, flying on the contrary like a flock of wild geeſe, all in a row the ſame way. ——— What confuſion! — what miſtakes! — fiddlers and painters judging by their eyes and ears, — admirable! — truſting to the paſſions excited in an air ſung, or a ſtory painted to the heart, — inſtead of meaſuring them by a quadrant.

In the foreground of this picture, a *ſtateſman* turning the political wheel, like a brute, the wrong way round—*againſt* the ſtream of corruption, — by heaven! — inſtead of *with* it.

In this corner, a ſon of the divine *Eſculapius*, writing a book againſt predeſtination; perhaps worſe, feeling his patient's pulſe, inſtead of his apothecary's — a brother of the faculty in the back

back ground upon his knees in tears, — drawing the curtains of a mangled victim to beg his forgiveneſs; — offering a fee, — inſtead of taking one.

In that ſpacious HALL, a coalition of the gown, from all the bars of it, driving a damn'd, dirty, vexatious cauſe before them, with all their might and main, the wrong way;— kicking it *out* of the great doors, inſtead of, *in*, —and with ſuch fury in their looks, and ſuch a degree of inveteracy in their manner of kicking it, as if the laws had been originally made for the peace and preſervation of mankind: —— perhaps a more enormous miſtake committed by them ſtill, — a litigated point fairly hung up;— for inſtance, Whether *John o'Nokes* his noſe could ſtand in *Tom o'Stiles* his face, without a treſpaſs or not, — raſhly determined by them in five and twenty minutes, which, with the cautious pro's and con's required in ſo intricate a proceeding, might have taken up as many months,— and if carried on upon a military plan, as your honours know, an ACTION ſhould be, with all the ſtratagems practicable therein, — ſuch as feints, — forced marches, — ſurprizes — ambuſcades,—maſk-batteries, and a thouſand other ſtrokes of generalſhip, which conſiſt in catechiſing at all advantages on both ſides,—— might reaſonably have laſted them as many years, finding food and raiment all that term for a centumvirate of the profeſſion.

As for the clergy——— No——— If I ſay a word againſt them I'll be ſhot.——— I have no deſire,— and beſides, if I had,——— I durſt not for my ſoul touch upon the ſubject,— with ſuch weak nerves and ſpirits and in the condition

dition I am in at preſent, 'twould be as much as my life was worth, to deject and contriſt myſelf with ſo ſad and melancholy an account, — and therefore, 'tis ſafer to draw a curtain acroſs, and haſten from it as faſt as I can, to the main and principal point I have undertaken to clear up — and that is, How it comes to paſs, that your men of leaſt *wit* are reported to be men of moſt *judgment* —— But mark, — I ſay, *reported to be*, — for it is no more, my dear Sirs, than a report, and which like twenty others taken up every day upon truſt, I maintain to be a vile and malicious report into the bargain.

This by the help of the obſervations already premiſed, and I hope already weighed and perpended by your reverences and worſhips, I ſhall forthwith make appear.

I hate ſet diſſertations, — and above all things in the world, 'tis one of the ſillieſt things in one of them, to darken your hypotheſis by placing a number of tall, opake words, one before another, in a right line, betwixt your own and your readers conception, — when in all likelihood, if you had looked about, you might have ſeen ſomething ſtanding, or hanging up, which would have cleared the point at once, — " for " what hindrance, hurt, or harm, doth the " laudable deſire of knowledge bring to any " man, if even from a ſot, a pot, a fool, a " ſtool, a winter-mitten, a truckle for a pully, " the lid of a goldſmith's crucible, an oyl bot- " tle, an old ſlipper, or a cane chair," —— I am this moment ſitting upon one. Will you give me leave to illuſtrate this affair of wit and judgment, by the two knobs on the top of the back of it, — they are faſten'd on, you ſee, with

with two pegs ſtuck ſlightly into two gimlet-holes, and will place what I have to ſay in ſo clear a light, as to let you ſee through the drift and meaning of my whole preface, as plainly as if every point and particle of it was made up of ſun beams.

I enter now directly upon the point.

——— Here ſtands *wit*, —— and there ſtands *judgment*, cloſe beſide it, juſt like the two knobs I'm ſpeaking of, upon the back of this ſelf ſame chair on which I am ſitting.

——— You ſee, they are the higheſt and moſt ornamental parts of its *frame*, — as wit and judgment are of *ours*, — and like them too, indubitably both made and fitted to go together, in order as we ſay in all ſuch caſes of duplicated embelliſhments, — *to anſwer one another*.

Now for the ſake of an experiment, and for the clearer illuſtrating this matter, — let us for a moment, take off one of theſe two curious ornaments, (I care not which) from the point or pinacle of the chair it now ſtands on; — nay, don't laugh at it ——— But did you ever ſee in the whole courſe of your lives ſuch a ridiculous buſineſs as this has made of it? ——— Why, 'tis as miſerable a ſight as a ſow with one ear; and there is juſt as much ſenſe and ſymmetry in the one, as in the other: —— do, — pray, get off your ſeats, only to take a view of it. —— Now would any man who valued his character a ſtraw, have turned a piece of work out of his hand in ſuch a condition? — nay, lay your hands upon your hearts, and anſwer this plain queſtion, Whether this one ſingle knob which now ſtands here like a blockhead by itſelf, can ſerve any purpoſe upon earth, but to put one

in

in mind of the want of the other; — and let me further aſk, in caſe the chair was your own, if you would not in your conſciences think, rather than be as it is, that it would be ten times better without any knob at all.

Now theſe two knobs — or top ornaments of the mind of man, which crown the whole entablature, — being, as I ſaid, wit and judgment, which of all others, as I have proved it, are the moſt needful, — the moſt priz'd, — the moſt calamitous to be without, and conſequently the hardeſt to come at, —— for all theſe reaſons put together, there is not a mortal amongſt us, ſo deſtitute of a love of good fame or feeding, —— or ſo ignorant of what will do him good therein, — who does not wiſh and ſtedfaſtly reſolve in his own mind, to be, or to be thought at leaſt maſter of the one or the other, and indeed of both of them, if the thing ſeems any way feaſible, or likely to be brought to paſs.

Now your graver gentry have little or no kind of chance in aiming at the one, — unleſs they laid hold of the other, —— pray what do you think would become of them? — Why, Sirs, in ſpight of all their *gravities*, they muſt e'en have been contented to have gone with their inſides naked: —— this was not to be borne, but by an effort of philoſophy not to be ſuppoſed in the caſe we are upon, — ſo that no one could well have been angry with them, had they been ſatisfied with what little they could have ſnatched up and ſecreted under their cloaks and great periwigs, had they not raiſed a *hue* and *cry* at the ſame time againſt the lawful owners.

I need not tell your worſhips, that this was done with ſo much cunning and artifice — that the great *Locke*, who was ſeldom outwitted by falſe ſounds, — was nevertheleſs bubbled here. The cry, it ſeems, was ſo deep and ſolemn a one, and what with the help of great wigs, grave faces, and other implements of deceit, was rendered ſo general a one againſt the *poor wits* in this matter, that the philoſopher himſelf was deceived by it, — it was his glory to free the world from the lumber of a thouſand vulgar errors; —— but this was not of the number; ſo that inſtead of ſitting down coolly, as ſuch a philoſopher ſhould have done, to have examined the matter of fact before he philoſophiſed upon it; — on the contrary, he took the fact for granted, and ſo joined in with the cry, and halloo'd it as boiſterouſly as the reſt.

This has been made the *Magna Charta* of ſtupidity ever ſince, — but your reverences plainly ſee, it has been obtained in ſuch a manner, that the title to it is not worth a groat; — which by the bye is one of the many and vile impoſitions which gravity and grave folks have to anſwer for hereafter.

As for great wigs, upon which I may be thought to have ſpoken my mind too freely, — I beg leave to qualify whatever has been unguardedly ſaid to their diſpraiſe or prejudice, by one general declaration —— That I have no abhorrence whatever, nor do I deteſt and abjure either great wigs or long beards, — any further than when I ſee they are beſpoke and let grow on purpoſe to carry on this ſelf-ſame impoſture — for any purpoſe, — peace be with them; — mark only, — I write not for them.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

EVERY day for at leaſt ten years together did my father reſolve to have it mended, ——'tis not mended yet; —— no family but ours would have borne with it an hour, — and what is moſt aſtoniſhing, there was not a ſubject in the world upon which my father was ſo elegant, as upon that of door-hinges. —— And yet at the ſame time, he was certainly one of the greateſt bubbles to them, I think, that hiſtory can produce: his rhetoric and conduct were at perpetual handy-cuffs, ——— Never did the parlour door open — but his philoſophy or his principles fell a victim to it; — three drops of oil with a feather, and a ſmart ſtroke of a hammer, had ſaved his honour for ever.

——— Inconſiſtent ſoul that man is! —— languiſhing under wounds which he has the power to heal! — his whole life a contradiction to his knowledge! —— his reaſon, that precious gift of God to him — (inſtead of pouring in oil) ſerving but to ſharpen his ſenſibilities, — to multiply his pains and render him more melancholy and uneaſy under them! —— poor unhappy creature that he ſhould do ſo! — are not the neceſſary cauſes of miſery in this life enow, but he muſt add voluntary ones to his ſtock of ſorrow; —ſtruggle againſt evils which cannot be avoided, and ſubmit to others, which a tenth part of the trouble they create him, would remove from his heart for ever?

By all that is good and virtuous! if there are three drops of oil to be got, and a hammer to

be found within ten miles of *Shandy-Hall*,—— the parlour door hinge ſhall be mended this reign.

CHAP. XXII.

WHEN corporal *Trim* had brought his two mortars to bear, he was delighted with his handy-work above meaſure; and knowing what a pleaſure it would be to his maſter to ſee them, he was not able to reſiſt the deſire he had of carrying them directly into his parlour.

Now next to the moral leſſon I had in view in mentioning the affair of *hinges*, I had a ſpeculative conſideration ariſing out of it, and it is this.

Had the parlour-door open'd and turn'd upon its hinges, as a door ſhould do—

——— Or for example, as cleverly as our government has been turning upon its hinges,—(that is, in caſe things have all along gone well with your worſhip,—otherwiſe I give up my ſimile)—in this caſe, I ſay, there had been no danger either to maſter or man in corporal *Trim*'s peeping in: the moment he had beheld my father and my uncle *Toby* faſt aſleep,—the reſpectfulneſs of his carriage was ſuch, he would have retired as ſilent as death, and left them both in their arm-chairs, dreaming as happy as he had found them; but the thing was morally ſpeaking ſo very impracticable, that for the many years in which this hinge was ſuffered to be out of order, and amongſt the hourly grievances my father ſubmitted to upon its account,—this was one; that he never folded his arms to take

take his nap after dinner, but the thoughts of being unavoidably awakened by the firſt perſon who ſhould open the door, was always uppermoſt in his imaginations, and ſo inceſſantly ſtep'd in betwixt him and the firſt balmy preſage of his repoſe, as to rob him, as he often declared, of the whole ſweets of it.

"*When hinges move upon bad things*, an' pleaſe your lordſhips, *how can it be otherwiſe?*"

Pray what's the matter? Who is there? cried my father, waking, the moment the door began to crack.——I wiſh the ſmith would give a peep at that confounded hinge;—'tis nothing, an' pleaſe your honour, ſaid *Trim*, but two mortars I am bringing in.——They ſhan't make a clatter with them here, cried my father haſtily.——If Dr. *Slop* has any drugs to pound, let him do it in the kitchen.——May it pleaſe your honour, cried *Trim*,—they are two mortar-pieces for a ſiege next ſummer, which I have been making out of a pair of jack-boots, which *Obadiah* told me your honour had left off wearing—By heaven! cried my father, ſpringing out of his chair, as he ſwore,—I have not one appointment belonging to me, which I ſet ſo much ſtore by, as I do by the jack-boots,—they were our great grandfather's, brother *Toby*,—they were *hereditary*. Then I fear, quoth my uncle *Toby*, *Trim* has cut off the entail.—I have only cut off the tops, an' pleaſe your honour, cried *Trim*.—Zounds! I hate *perpetuities* as much as any man alive, cried my father,—but theſe jack-boots, continued he, (ſmiling, though very angry at the ſame time) have been in the family, brother, ever ſince the civil wars;—Sir *Roger Shandy* wore

them at the battle of *Marſton-Moor*—I declare I would not have taken ten pounds for them.—I'll pay you the money, brother *Shandy*, quoth my uncle *Toby*, looking at the two mortars with infinite pleaſure, and putting his hand into his breeches-pocket, as he viewed them.—I'll pay you the ten pounds this moment with all my heart and ſoul.

Brother *Toby*, replied my father, altering his tone, you care not what money you diſſipate and throw away, provided, continued he, 'tis but upon a ſiege.—Have I not a hundred and twenty pounds a year, beſides my half pay? cried my uncle *Toby*.—What is that, replied my father, haſtily,—to ten pounds for a pair of jack-boots?—brother, twelve guineas for your *pontoons*;—half as much for your *dutch* draw-bridge;—to ſay nothing of the train of little braſs-artillery you beſpoke laſt week, with twenty other preparations for the ſiege of *Meſſina*; believe me, dear brother *Toby*, continued my father, taking him by the hand,—theſe military operations of yours are above your ſtrength;—you mean well,—but they carry you into greater expences than you were firſt aware of,——and take my word,—dear *Toby*, they will in the end quite ruin your fortune, and make a beggar of you.—What ſignifies if they do, brother, replied my uncle *Toby*, ſo long as we know 'tis for the good of the nation.—

My father could not help ſmiling for his ſoul;—his anger at the worſt was never more than a ſpark,—and the zeal and ſimplicity of *Trim*,—and the generous (though hobby-horſical) gallantry of my uncle *Toby*, brought him into perfect good humour with them in an inſtant.

Generous

Generous ſouls!— God proſper you both and your mortar pieces too, quoth my father to himſelf.

CHAP. XXIII.

ALL is quiet and huſh, cried my father, at leaſt above ſtairs, — I hear not one foot ſtirring. ——— Prithee, *Trim*, who is in the kitchen? There is no one ſoul in the kitchen, anſwered *Trim*, making a low bow as he ſpoke, except Dr. *Slop*. ——— Confuſion! cried my father, (getting up upon his legs a ſecond time) —not one ſingle thing has gone right this day! had I faith in aſtrology, brother, (which by the bye, my father had) I would have ſworn ſome retrograde planet was hanging over this unfortunate houſe of mine, and turning every individual thing in it out of its place. —— Why, I thought Dr. *Slop* had been above ſtairs with my wife, and ſo ſaid you. ——— What can the fellow be puzzling about in the kitchen? — He is buſy, an' pleaſe your honour, replied *Trim*, in making a bridge. —— 'tis very obliging in him, quoth my uncle *Toby*; ——— pray give my humble ſervice to Dr. *Slop*, *Trim*, and tell him I thank him heartily.

You muſt know my uncle *Toby* miſtook the bridge as widely as my father miſtook the mortars; — but to underſtand how my uncle *Toby* could miſtake the bridge, — I fear I muſt give you an exact account of the road which led to it; ——or to drop my metaphor, (for there is nothing more diſhoneſt in an hiſtorian, than the uſe of one) —— In order to conceive the

probability of this error in my uncle *Toby* aright, I muſt give you ſome account of an adventure of *Trim*'s, though much againſt my will. I ſay much againſt my will, only becauſe the ſtory, in one ſenſe, is certainly out of its place here; for by right it ſhould come in, either amongſt the anecdotes of my uncle *Toby*'s amours with widow *Wadman*, in which corporal *Trim* was no mean actor, —— or elſe in the middle of his and my uncle *Toby*'s campaigns on the bowling-green, —for it will do very well in either place; —— but then if I reſerve it for either of thoſe parts of my ſtory, —I ruin the ſtory I'm upon —and if I tell it here,—I anticipate matters, and ruin it there.

— What would your worſhips have me to do in this caſe?

— Tell it Mr. *Shandy*, by all means.

— You are a fool, *Triſtram*, if you do.

O ye POWERS! (for powers ye are, and great ones too) — which enable mortal man to tell a ſtory worth the hearing,——that kindly ſhew him, where he is to begin it,—and where he is to end it,—what he is to put into it,—and what he is to leave out, — how much of it he is to caſt into ſhade, and whereabouts he is to throw his light. ——— Ye, who preſide over this vaſt empire of biographical freebooters, and ſee how many ſcrapes and plunges your ſubjects hourly fall into; — will you do any thing?

I beg and beſeech you, (in caſe you will do nothing better for us) that wherever, in any part of your dominions it ſo falls, that three ſeveral roads meet in one point, as they have done juſt here, —— that at leaſt you ſet up a guide-poſt, in the centre of them, in mere charity to direct

direct an uncertain devil, which of the three he is to take.

CHAP. XXIV.

THO' the ſhock my uncle *Toby* received the year after the demolition of *Dunkirk*, in this affair with widow *Wadman*, had fixed him in a reſolution, never more to think of the ſex, —or of aught which belonged to it;—yet corporal *Trim* had made no ſuch bargain with himſelf. Indeed in my uncle *Toby*'s caſe there was a ſtrange and unaccountable concurrence of circumſtances which inſenſibly drew him in, to lay ſiege to that fair and ſtrong citadel.——— In *Trim*'s caſe there was a concurrence of nothing in the world, but of him and *Bridget* in the kitchen; — though in truth, the love and veneration he bore his maſter was ſuch, and ſo fond was he of imitating him in all he did, that had my uncle *Toby* employed his time and genius in tagging of points, — I am perſuaded the honeſt corporal would have laid down his arms, and followed his example with pleaſure. When therefore my uncle *Toby* ſat down before the miſtreſs, — corporal *Trim* incontinently took ground before the maid.

Now, my dear friend *Garrick*, whom I have ſo much cauſe to eſteem and honour,—(why, or wherefore, 'tis no matter) — can it eſcape your penetration, — I defy it, — that ſo many playwrights, and opificers of chit chat have ever ſince been working upon *Trim*'s and my uncle *Toby*'s pattern.—— I care not what *Ariſtotle*, or *Pacuvius*, or *Boſſu*, or *Ricaboni* ſay, — (though

I never read one of them) — there is not a greater difference between a ſingle-horſe chair and madam *Pompadour*'s *vis-à-vis*, than betwixt a ſingle amour, and an amour thus nobly doubled, and going upon all four, prancing throughout a grand drama. — Sir, a ſimple, ſingle, ſilly affair of that kind, — is quite loſt in five acts, — but that is neither here or there.

After a ſeries of attacks and repulſes in a courſe of nine months on my uncle *Toby*'s quarter, a moſt minute account of every particular of which ſhall be given in its proper place, my uncle *Toby*, honeſt man! found it neceſſary to draw off his forces, and raiſe the ſiege ſomewhat indignantly.

Corporal *Trim*, as I ſaid, had made no ſuch bargain either with himſelf — or with any one elſe, — the fidelity however of his heart not ſuffering him to go into a houſe which his maſter had forſaken with diſguſt, — he contented himſelf with turning his part of the ſiege into a blockade; — that is, he keeps others off, — for though he never after went to the houſe, yet he never met *Bridget* in the village, but he would either nod or wink, or ſmile, or look kindly at her, — or (as circumſtances directed) he would ſhake her by the hand, — or aſk her lovingly how ſhe did, — or would give her a ribband, — and now and then, though never but when it could be done with decorum, would give *Bridget* a —.

Preciſely in this ſituation, did theſe things ſtand for five years; that is from the demolition of *Dunkirk* in the year 13, to the latter end of my uncle *Toby*'s campaign in the year 18, which was about ſix or ſeven weeks before the time I'm ſpeaking of. ——— When *Trim*, as his cuſtom

tom was after he had put my uncle *Toby* to bed, going down one moon-ſhiny night to ſee that every thing was right at his fortifications, — in the lane ſeparated from the bowling green with flowering ſhrubs and holly, —— he eſpied his *Bridget*.

As the corporal thought there was nothing in the world ſo well worth ſhewing as the glorious works which he and my uncle *Toby* had made, *Trim* courteouſly and gallantly took her by the hand, and led her in: this was not done ſo privately, but that the foul-mouth'd trumpet of Fame carried it from ear to ear, till at length it reached my father's, with this untoward circumſtance along with it, that my uncle *Toby*'s curious draw-bridge, conſtructed and painted after the *Dutch* faſhion, and which went quite acroſs the ditch,— was broke down, and ſome how or other cruſhed all to pieces that very night.

My father, as you have obſerved, had no great eſteem for my uncle *Toby*'s hobby-horſe, — he thought it the moſt ridiculous horſe that ever gentleman mounted, and indeed unleſs my uncle *Toby* vexed him about it, could never think of it once, without ſmiling at it, —— ſo that it never could get lame or happen any miſchance, but it tickled my father's imagination beyond meaſure; but this being an accident much more to his humour than any one which had yet befall'n it, it proved an inexhauſtible fund of entertainment to him. ——— Well, — but dear *Toby!* my father would ſay, do tell us ſeriouſly how this affair of the bridge happened. ——— How can you teaze me ſo much about it? my uncle *Toby* would reply, — I have told it you twenty times, word for word as *Trim* told it me.

——— Prithee,

——Prithee, how was it then, corporal? my father would cry, turning to *Trim*. It was a mere misfortune, an' pleaſe your honour,—I was ſhewing Mrs. *Bridget* our fortifications, and in going too near the edge of the foſsè, I unfortunately ſlip'd in.—— Very well, *Trim!* my father would cry,—(ſmiling myſteriouſly, and giving a nod,—but without interrupting him)—and being link'd faſt, an' pleaſe your honour, arm in arm with Mrs. *Bridget*, I dragg'd her after me, by means of which ſhe fell backwards ſoſs againſt the bridge,——and *Trim*'s foot, (my uncle *Toby* would cry, taking the ſtory out of his mouth) getting into the cuvette, he tumbled full againſt the bridge too.—It was a thouſand to one, my uncle *Toby* would add, that the poor fellow did not break his leg.—Ay truly! my father would ſay,—a limb is ſoon broke, brother *Toby*, in ſuch encounters.——And ſo, an' pleaſe your honour, the bridge, which your honour knows was a very ſlight one, was broke down betwixt us, and ſplintered all to pieces.

At other times, but eſpecially when my uncle *Toby* was ſo unfortunate as to ſay a ſyllable about cannons, bombs or petards,—my father would exhauſt all the ſtores of his eloquence (which indeed were very great) in a panegyric upon the BATTERING-RAMS of the ancients,—the VINEA which *Alexander* made uſe of at the ſiege of *Tyre*.——He would tell my uncle *Toby* of the CATAPULTÆ of the *Syrians* which threw ſuch monſtrous ſtones ſo many hundred feet, and ſhook the ſtrongeſt bulwarks from their very foundation;—he would go on and deſcribe the wonderful mechaniſm of the BALLISTA,

TA, which *Marcellinus* makes ſo much rout about,—the terrible effects of the PYRABOLI,—which caſt fire,— the danger of the TEREBRA and SCORPIO, which caſt javelins.—— But what are theſe, he would ſay, to the deſtructive machinery of corporal *Trim?* — Believe me, brother *Toby*, no bridge, or baſtion, or ſally port that ever was conſtructed in this world, can hold out againſt ſuch artillery.

My uncle *Toby* would never attempt any defence againſt the force of this ridicule, but that of redoubling the vehemence of ſmoaking his pipe; in doing which, he raiſed ſo denſe a vapour one night after ſupper, that it ſet my father, who was a little phthiſical, into a ſuffocating fit of violent coughing; my uncle *Toby* leap'd up without feeling the pain upon his groin, —and, with infinite pity, ſtood beſide his brother's chair, tapping his back with one hand, and holding his head with the other, and from time to time, wiping his eyes with a clean cambrick handkerchief, which he pull'd out of his pocket.—— The affectionate and endearing manner in which my uncle *Toby* did theſe little offices,—cut my father thro' his reins, for the pain he had juſt been giving him.—— May my brains be knock'd out with a battering ram or a catapulta, I care not which, quoth my father to himſelf,—if ever I inſult this worthy ſoul more.

CHAP. XXV.

THE draw-bridge being held irreparable, *Trim* was ordered directly to ſet about another,—but not upon the ſame model; for cardinal

cardinal *Alberoni*'s intrigues at that time being diſcovered, and my uncle *Toby* rightly foreſeeing that a flame would inevitably break out betwixt *Spain* and the Empire, and that the operations of the enſuing campaign muſt in all likelihood be either in *Naples* or *Sicily*, — he determined upon an *Italian* bridge, — (my uncle *Toby* by the bye, was not far out in his conjectures) — but my father, who was infinitly the better politician, and took the lead as far of my uncle *Toby* in the cabinet, as my uncle *Toby* took it of him in the field, — convinced him, that if the King of *Spain* and the Emperor went together by the ears, that *England* and *France* and *Holland* muſt by force of their pre-engagements, all enter the liſts too; — and if ſo, he would ſay, the combatants, brother *Toby*, as ſure as we are alive, will fall to it again, pell-mell, upon the old prize-fighting ſtage of *Flanders*; — then what will you do with your *Italian* bridge?

— We will go on with it then, upon the old model, cried my uncle *Toby*.

When corporal *Trim* had about half finiſhed it in that ſtile, — my uncle *Toby* found out a capital defect in it, which he had never thoroughly conſidered before. It turned, it ſeems, upon hinges at both ends of it, opening in the middle, one half of which turning to one ſide of the foſsè, and the other, to the other; the advantage of which was this, that by dividing the weight of the bridge into two equal portions, it impowered my uncle *Toby* to raiſe it up or let it down with the end of his crutch, and with one hand, which, as his garriſon was weak, was as much as he could well ſpare, — but the diſadvantages of ſuch a conſtruction were inſurmountable, —

ble, —for by this means, he would ſay, I leave one half of my bridge in my enemy's poſſeſſion, —and pray of what uſe is the other?

The natural remedy for this, was no doubt to have his bridge faſt only at one end with hinges, ſo that the whole might be lifted up together, and ſtand bolt upright, — but that was rejected for the reaſon given above.

For a whole week after he was determined in his mind to have one of that particular conſtruction which is made to draw back horizontally, to hinder a paſſage; and to thruſt forwards again to gain a paſſage — of which ſorts your worſhips might have ſeen three famous ones at *Spires* before its deſtruction, — and one now at *Briſac*, if I miſtake not; — but my father adviſed my uncle *Toby*, with great earneſtneſs, to have nothing more to do with thruſting bridges, — and my uncle foreſeeing moreover that it would but perpetuate the memory of the corporal's misfortune, — he changed his mind, for that of the marquis *d' Hôpital*'s invention, which the younger *Bernouilli* has ſo well and learnedly deſcribed, as your worſhips may ſee, — *Act. Erud. Lipſ.* an. 1695, — to theſe a lead weight is an eternal balance, and keeps watch as well as a couple of centinels, in as much as the conſtruction of them was a curve line approximating to a cycloid, — if not a cycloid itſelf.

My uncle *Toby* underſtood the nature of a parabola as well as any man in *England*, — but was not quite ſuch a maſter of the cycloid; — he talked however about it every day; — the bridge went not forwards. — We'll aſk ſomebody about it, cried my uncle *Toby* to *Trim*.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVI.

WHEN *Trim* came in and told my father, that Dr. *Slop* was in the kitchen, and buſy in making a bridge, — my uncle *Toby*, — the affair of the jack-boots having juſt then raiſed a train of military ideas in his brain, — took it inſtantly for granted that Dr. *Slop* was making a model of the marquis *d' Hôpital*'s bridge. —— 'Tis very obliging in him, quoth my uncle *Toby*; pray give my humble ſervice to Dr. *Slop*, *Trim*, and tell him I thank him heartily.

Had my uncle *Toby*'s head been a *Savoyard*'s box, and my father peeping in all the time at one end of it, — it could not have given him a more diſtinct conception of the operations in my uncle *Toby*'s imagination, than what he had; ſo notwithſtanding the catapulta and battering-ram, and his bitter imprecation about them, he was juſt beginning to triumph. —

When *Trim*'s anſwer, in an inſtant, tore the laurel from his brows, and twiſted it to pieces.

CHAP. XXVII.

—— THIS unfortunate draw-bridge of yours, quoth my father — God bleſs your honour, cried *Trim*, 'tis a bridge for maſter's noſe. —— In bringing him into the world with his vile inſtruments, he has cruſh'd his noſe, *Suſannah* ſays, as flat as a pancake to his face, and he is making a falſe bridge with a

piece

piece of cotton, and a thin piece of whalebone out of *Suſannah*'s ſtays to raiſe it up.

— Lead me, brother *Toby*, cried my father, to my room this inſtant.

CHAP. XXVIII.

FROM the firſt moment I ſat down to write my life for the amuſement of the world, and my opinions for its inſtruction, has a cloud inſenſibly been gathering over my father. — A tide of little evils and diſtreſſes has been ſetting in againſt him. — Not one thing, as he obſerved himſelf, has gone right: and now is the ſtorm thicken'd, and going to break, and pour down full upon his head.

I enter upon this part of my ſtory in the moſt penſive and melancholy frame of mind, that ever ſympathetic breaſt was touch'd with.—My nerves relax as I tell it. — Every line I write, I feel an abatement of the quickneſs of my pulſe, and of that careleſs alacrity with it, which every day of my life prompts me to ſay and write a thouſand things I ſhould not. —— And this moment that I laſt dipp'd my pen into my ink, I could not help taking notice what a cautious air of ſad compoſure and ſolemnity there appear'd in my manner of doing it. — Lord! how different from the raſh jerks, and hare-brain'd ſquirts thou art wont, *Triſtram!* to tranſact it with in other humours, — dropping thy pen, — ſpurting thy ink about thy table and thy books, — as if thy pen and thy ink, thy books and thy furniture coſt thee nothing.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

—I WON'T go about to argue the point with you, — 'tis ſo, — and I am perſuaded of it, madam, as much as can be, "That both man and woman bear pain or ſorrow, (and, for aught I know, pleaſure too) beſt in a horizontal poſition."

The moment my father got up into his chamber, he threw himſelf proſtrate acroſs his bed in the wildeſt diſorder imaginable, but at the ſame time, in the moſt lamentable attitude of a man borne down with ſorrows, that ever the eye of pity dropp'd a tear for.—The palm of his right hand, as he fell upon the bed, receiving his forehead, and covering the greateſt part of both his eyes, gently ſunk down with his head (his elbow giving way backwards) till his noſe touch'd the quilt; — his left arm hung inſenſible over the ſide of the bed, his knuckles reclining upon the handle of the chamber-pot, which peep'd out beyond the valance, his right leg (his left being drawn up towards his body) hung half over the ſide of the bed, the edge of it preſſing upon his ſhin bone. —— He felt it not. A fixed, inflexible ſorrow took poſſeſſion of every line of his face. —— He ſigh'd once, — heav'd his breaſt often, but utter'd not a word.

An old ſet-ſtitch'd chair, valanced and fringed around with party-coloured worſted bobs, ſtood at the bed's head, oppoſite to the ſide where my father's head reclined. — My uncle *Toby* ſat him down in it.

Before

Before an affliction is digeſted, — conſolation ever comes too ſoon; —and after it is digeſted, — it comes too late: ſo that you ſee, madam, there is but a mark between theſe two, as fine almoſt as a hair, for a comforter to take aim at: my uncle *Toby* was always either on this ſide, or on that of it, and would often ſay, He believed in his heart, he could as ſoon hit the longitude; for this reaſon, when he ſat down in the chair, he drew the curtain a little forwards, and having a tear at every one's ſervice, — he pull'd out a cambrick handkerchief, — gave a low ſigh, — but held his peace.

CHAP. XXX.

——"*ALL is not gain that is got into the purſe.*"——So that notwithſtanding my father had the happineſs of reading the oddeſt books in the univerſe, and had moreover, in himſelf, the oddeſt way of thinking, that ever man in it was bleſs'd with, yet it had this drawback upon him after all, — that it laid him open to ſome of the oddeſt and moſt whimſical diſtreſſes; of which this particular one which he ſunk under at preſent is as ſtrong an example as can be given.

No doubt, the breaking down of the bridge of a child's noſe, by the edge of a pair of forceps, — however ſcientifically applied, — would vex any man in the world, who was at ſo much pains in begetting a child, as my father was, — yet it will not account for the extravagance of his affliction, or will it juſtify the unchriſtian manner

ner he abandoned and ſurrendered himſelf to it.

To explain this, I muſt leave him upon the bed for half an hour,—and my good uncle *Toby* in his old fringed chair ſitting behind him.

CHAP. XXXI.

———I THINK it a very unreaſonable demand,—cried my great grandfather, twiſting up the paper, and throwing it upon the table.——— By this account, madam, you have but two thouſand pounds fortune, and not a ſhilling more,—and you inſiſt upon having three hundred pounds a year jointure for it ———

———" Becauſe," replied my great grandmother, " you have little or no noſe, Sir." —

Now, before I venture to make uſe of the word *Noſe* a ſecond time,——to avoid all confuſion in what will be ſaid upon it, in this intereſting part of my ſtory, it may not be amiſs to explain my own meaning, and define, with all poſſible exactneſs and preciſion, what I would willingly be underſtood to mean by the term: being of opinion, that 'tis owing to the negligence and perverſeneſs of writers, in deſpiſing this precaution, and to nothing elſe,——That all the polemical writings in divinity, are not as clear and demonſtrative as thoſe upon *a Will o'the Wiſp*, or any other ſound part of philoſophy, and natural purſuit; in order to which, what have you to do, before you ſet out, unleſs you intend to go puzzling on to the day of judgment,—but to give the world a good definition, and ſtand to it, of the main word you have moſt

moſt occaſion for, — changing it, Sir, as you would a guinea, into ſmall coin? — which done, — let the father of confuſion puzzle you, if he can; or put a different idea either into your head, or your reader's head, if he knows how.

In books of ſtrict morality and cloſe reaſoning, ſuch as this I am engaged in,—the neglect is inexcuſable; and heaven is witneſs, how the world has revenged itſelf upon me for leaving ſo many openings to equivocal ſtrictures,— and for depending ſo much as I have done, all along, upon the cleanlineſs of my reader's imaginations.

——— Here are two ſenſes, cried *Eugenius*, as we walk'd along, pointing with the forefinger of his right hand to the word *Crevice*, in the fifty ſecond page of the ſecond volume of this book of books, — here are two ſenſes, — quoth he. —— And here are two roads, replied I, turning ſhort upon him, — a dirty and a clean one, — which ſhall we take? ——— The clean, — by all means, replied *Eugenius*. *Eugenius*, ſaid I, ſtepping before him, and laying my hand upon his breaſt,—to define — is to diſtruſt. — Thus I triumph'd over *Eugenius*; but I triumph'd over him as I always do, like a fool. — 'Tis my comfort, however, I am not an obſtinate one; therefore

I define a noſe, as follows, — intreating only beforehand, and beſeeching my readers, both male and female, of what age, complexion, and condition ſoever, for the love of God and their own ſouls, to guard againſt the temptations and ſugeſtions of the devil, and ſuffer him by no art or wile to put any other ideas into their minds, than what I put into my definition.——— For

by

by the word *Noſe*, throughout all this long chapter of noſes, and in every other part of my work, where the word *Noſe* occurs,——I declare, by that word I mean a Noſe, and nothing more, or leſs.

CHAP. XXXII.

——"BECAUSE," quoth my grandmother, repeating the words again,—"you have little or no noſe, Sir."

S'death! cried my great grandfather, clapping his hand upon his noſe,—'tis not ſo ſmall as that comes to; — 'tis a full inch longer than my father's. ——— Now, my great grandfather's noſe was for all the world like unto the noſes of all the men, women, and children, whom *Pantagruel* found dwelling upon the iſland of ENNASIN. — By the way, if you would know the ſtrange way of getting akin amongſt ſo flat-noſed a people,—you muſt read the book; find it out yourſelf, you never can. —

—'Twas ſhaped, Sir, like an ace of clubs.

—'Tis a full inch, continued my great grandfather, preſſing up the ridge of his noſe with his finger and thumb; and repeating his aſſertion, — 'tis a full inch longer, madam, than my father's. — You muſt mean your uncle's, replied my great grandmother.

——— My great grandfather was convinced. — He untwiſted the paper, and ſigned the article.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIII.

——WHAT an unconſcionable jointure, my dear, do we pay out of this ſmall eſtate of ours, quoth my grandmother to my grandfather.

My father, replied my grandfather, had no more noſe, my dear, ſaving the mark, than there is upon the back of my hand.—

—— Now, you muſt know, that my great grandmother outlived my grandfather twelve years; ſo that my father had the jointure to pay, a hundred and fifty pounds half yearly —— (on *Michaelmas* and *Lady-day*,) —— during all that time.

No man diſcharged pecuniary obligations with a better grace than my father. — And as far as the hundred pounds went, he would fling it upon the table, guinea by guinea, with that ſpirited jerk of an honeſt welcome, which generous ſouls, and generous ſouls only are able to fling down money: but as ſoon as ever he enter'd upon the odd fifty, — he generally gave a loud *Hem!*—rubb'd the ſide of his noſe leiſurely with the flat part of his forefinger,—inſerted his hand cautiouſly betwixt his head and the cawl of his wig, — look'd at both ſides of every guinea, as he parted with it,—and ſeldom could get to the end of fifty pounds, without pulling out his handherchief, and wiping his temples.

Defend me, gracious heaven! from thoſe perſecuting ſpirits who make no allowances for theſe workings within us. — Never, — O never may I lay down in their tents, who cannot, re-

lax

lax the engine, and feel pity for the force of education, and the prevalence of opinions long derived from anceſtors!

For three generations at leaſt, this *tenet* in favour of long noſes had gradually been taking root in our family.——TRADITION was all along on its ſide, and INTEREST was every half year ſtepping in to ſtrengthen it; ſo that the whimſicality of my father's brain was far from having the whole honour of this, as it had of almoſt all his other ſtrange notions.— For in a great meaſure he might be ſaid to have ſuck'd this in, with his mother's milk. He did his part however.— If education planted the miſtake, (in caſe it was one) my father watered it, and ripened it to perfection.

He would often declare, in ſpeaking his thoughts upon the ſubject, that he did not conceive how the greateſt family in *England* could ſtand it out againſt an uninterrupted ſucceſſion of ſix or ſeven ſhort noſes.— And for the contrary reaſon, he would generally add, That it muſt be one of the greateſt problems in civil life, where the ſame number of long and jolly noſes following one another in a direct line, did not raiſe and hoiſt it up into the beſt vacancies in the kingdom.—He would often boaſt that the *Shandy* family rank'd very high in king *Harry* the VIIIth's time, but owed its riſe to no ſtate engine,—he would ſay,—but to that only;—but that, like other families, he would add,—it had felt the turn of the wheel, and had never recovered the blow of my great grandfather's noſe.— It was an ace of clubs indeed, he would cry, ſhaking his head, and as vile a one for an unfortunate family, as ever turn'd up trumps.

— Fair

—Fair and ſoftly, gentle reader! — where is thy fancy carrying thee? — If there is truth in man, by my great grandfather's noſe, I mean the external organ of ſmelling, or that part of man which ſtands prominent in his face, — and which painters ſay, in good jolly noſes and well-proportioned faces, ſhould comprehend a full third, — that is meaſuring downwards from the ſetting on of the hair.

— What a life of it has an author, at this paſs!

CHAP. XXXIV.

IT is a ſingular bleſſing, that nature has form'd the mind of man with the ſame happy backwardneſs and renitency againſt conviction, which is obſerved in old dogs, --- "of not learning new tricks."

What a ſhuttlecock of a fellow would the greateſt philoſopher that ever exiſted, be whiſk'd into at once, did he read ſuch books, and obſerve ſuch facts, and think ſuch thoughts, as would eternally be making him change ſides!

Now, my father, as I told you laſt year, deteſted all this. — He pick'd up an opinion, Sir, as a man in a ſtate of nature picks up an apple. ——— It becomes his own, ——— and if he is a man of ſpirit, he would loſe his life rather than give it up.———

I am aware, that *Didius* the great civilian, will conteſt this point; and cry out againſt me, Whence comes this man's right to this apple? *ex confeſſo*, he will ſay, ——— things were in ſtate of nature. ——— The apple, as much *Frank*'s apple, as *John*'s. Pray, Mr. *Shandy*,

what patent has he to ſhew for it? and how did it begin to be his? was it, when he ſet his heart upon it? or when he gather'd it? or when he chew'd it? or when he roaſted it? or when he peel'd? or when he brought it home? or when he digeſted it? ——— or when he ——? —— For 'tis plain, Sir, if the firſt picking up of the apple, made it not his,——that no ſubſequent act could.

Brother *Didius*, *Tribonius* will anſwer, —— (now *Tribonius* the civilian and church lawyer's beard being three inches and a half and three eighths longer than *Didius* his beard, —— I'm glad he takes up the cudgels for me, ſo I give myſelf no further trouble about the anſwer.) ——Brother *Didius*, *Tribonius* will ſay, it is a decreed caſe, as you may find it in the fragments of *Gregorius* and *Hermogenes*'s codes, and in all the codes from *Juſtinian*'s down to the codes of *Louis* and *Des Eaux*, —— That the ſweat of a man's brows, and the exſudations of a man's brains, are as much a man's own property, as the breeches upon his backſide;—which ſaid exſudations, *&c.* being drop'd upon the ſaid apple by the labour of finding it, and picking it up; and being moreover indiſſolubly waſted, and as indiſſolubly annex'd by the picker up, to the thing pick'd up, carried home, roaſted, peel'd, eaten, digeſted, and ſo on; ——'tis evident that the gatherer of the apple, in ſo doing, has mix'd up ſomething which was his own, with the apple which was not his own, by which means he has acquired a property; —— or, in other words, the apple is *John*'s apple.

By the ſame learned chain of reaſoning my father ſtood up for all his opinions: he had ſpared no pains in picking them up, and the more

more they lay out of the common way, the better ſtill was his title. ——— No mortal claim'd them: they had coſt him moreover as much labour in cooking and digeſting as in the caſe above, ſo that they might well and truly be ſaid to be his own goods and chattles. —— Accordingly he held faſt by 'em, both by teeth and claws,—would fly to whatever he could lay his hands on, —and in a word, would intrench and fortify them round with as many circumvallations and breaſt-works, as my uncle *Toby* would a citadel.

There was one plaguy rub in the way of this, —the ſcarcity of materials to make any thing of a defence with, in caſe of a ſmart attack; inaſmuch as few men of great genius had exerciſed their parts in writing books upon the ſubject of great noſes; by the trotting of my lean horſe, the thing is incredible! and I am quite loſt in my underſtanding when I am conſidering what a treaſure of precious time and talents together has been waſted upon worſe ſubjects,—and how many millions of books in all languages, and in all poſſible types and bindings, have been fabricated upon points not half ſo much tending to the unity and peace-making of the world. What was to be had, however he ſet the greater ſtore by; and though my father would oft-times ſport with my uncle *Toby*'s library, —— which, by the bye, was ridiculous enough,—yet at the very ſame time he did it, he collected every book and treatiſe which had been ſyſtematically wrote upon noſes, with as much care as my honeſt uncle *Toby* had done thoſe upon military architecture. —— 'Tis true a much leſs table would have held them; — but that was not thy tranſgreſſion, my dear uncle. —

Here, — but why here, — rather than in any other part of my ſtory,—I am not able to tell;—but here it is,—my heart ſtops me to pay to thee, my dear uncle *Toby*, once for all, the tribute I owe thy goodneſs ——— Here let me thruſt my chair aſide, and kneel down upon the ground, whilſt I am pouring forth the warmeſt ſentiments of love for thee, and veneration for the excellency of thy character, that ever virtue and nature kindled in a nephew's boſom. —— Peace and comfort reſt for evermore upon thy head! ——Thou envied'ſt no man's comforts,——inſulted'ſt no man's opinions. —— Thou blackened'ſt no man's character, — devoured'ſt no man's bread: gently with faithful *Trim* behind thee, didſt thou amble round the little circle of thy pleaſures, joſtling no creature in thy way;—for each one's ſervice, thou had'ſt a tear,—for each man's need, thou had'ſt a ſhilling.

Whilſt I am worth one, to pay a weeder, — thy path from thy door to thy bowling-green ſhall never be grown up. — Whilſt there is a rood and a half of land in the *Shandy* family, thy fortifications, my dear uncle *Toby*, ſhall never be demoliſh'd.

CHAP. XXXV.

MY father's collection was not great, but to make amends, it was curious; and conſequently, he was ſome time in making it; he had the great good fortune however to ſet off well, in getting *Bruſcambille*'s prologue upon long noſes, almoſt for nothing, — for he gave no more for *Bruſcambille* than three half crowns; owing

owing indeed to the ſtrong fancy which the ſtall-man ſaw my father had for the book the moment he laid his hands upon it. —— There are not three *Bruſcambilles* in *Chriſtendom*, — ſaid the ſtall-man, except what are chain'd up in the libraries of the curious. My father flung down the money as quick as lightning, — took *Bruſcambille* into his boſom, — hyed home from *Piccadilly* to *Coleman*-ſtreet with it, as he would have hyed home with a treaſure, without taking his hand once off from *Bruſcambille* all the way.

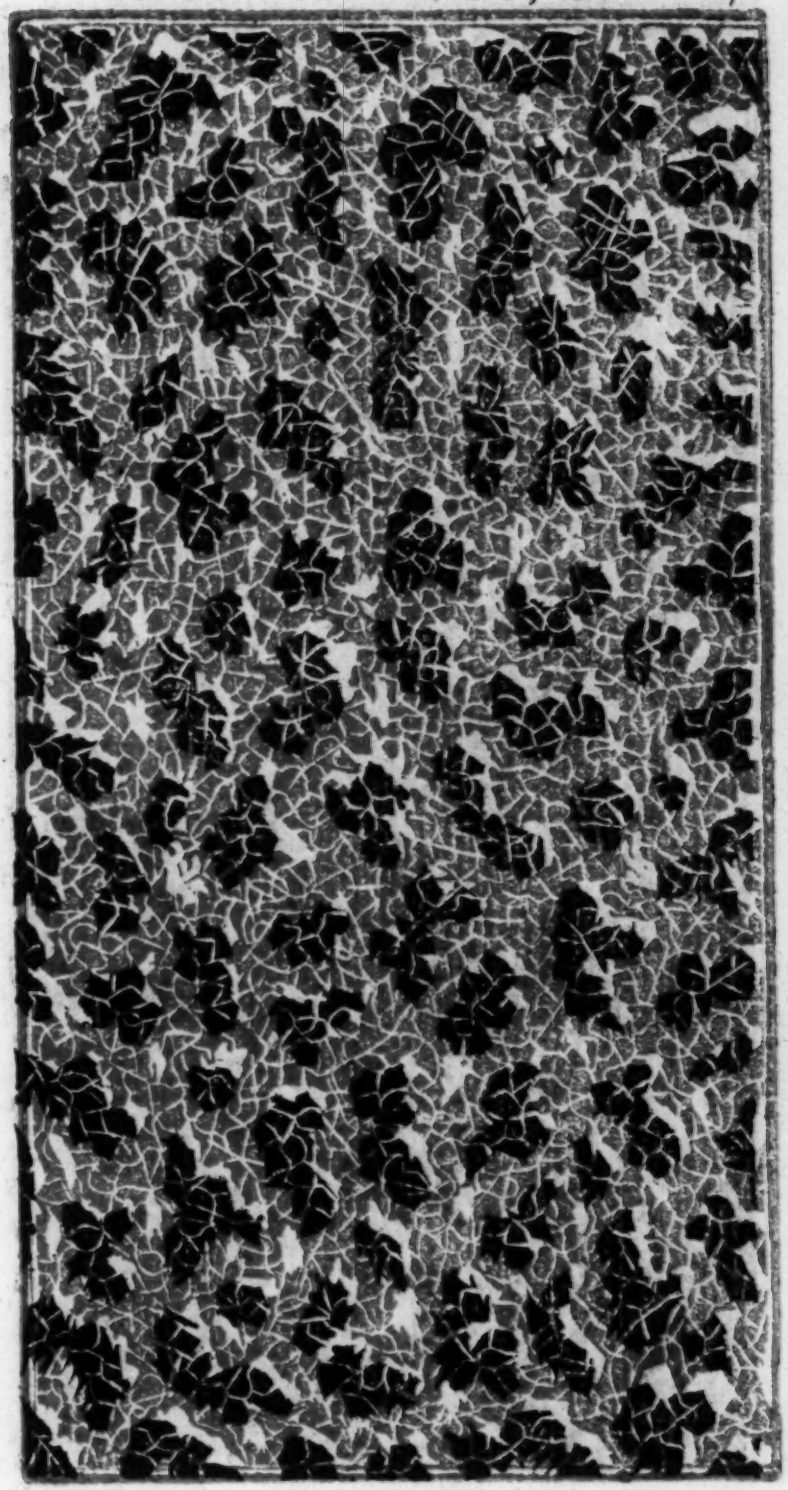
To thoſe who do not yet know of which gender *Bruſcambille* is, — inaſmuch as a prologue upon long noſes might eaſily be done by either, — 'twill be no objection againſt the ſimile, — to ſay, That when my father got home, he ſolaced himſelf with *Bruſcambille* after the manner, in which, 'tis ten to one, your worſhip ſolaced yourſelf with your firſt miſtreſs, —that is from morning even unto night: which by the bye, how delightful ſoever it may prove to the inamorato, — is of little or no entertainment at all, to by-ſtanders. — Take notice, I go no farther with the ſimile, — my father's eye was greater than his appetite, — his zeal greater than his knowledge, — he cool'd — his affections became divided, — he got hold of *Prignitz*—purchaſed *Scroderus*, *Andrea Paræus*, *Bouchet*'s Evening Conferences, and above all, the great and learned *Hafen Slawkenbergius*: of which, as I ſhall have much to ſay by and by — I will ſay nothing now.

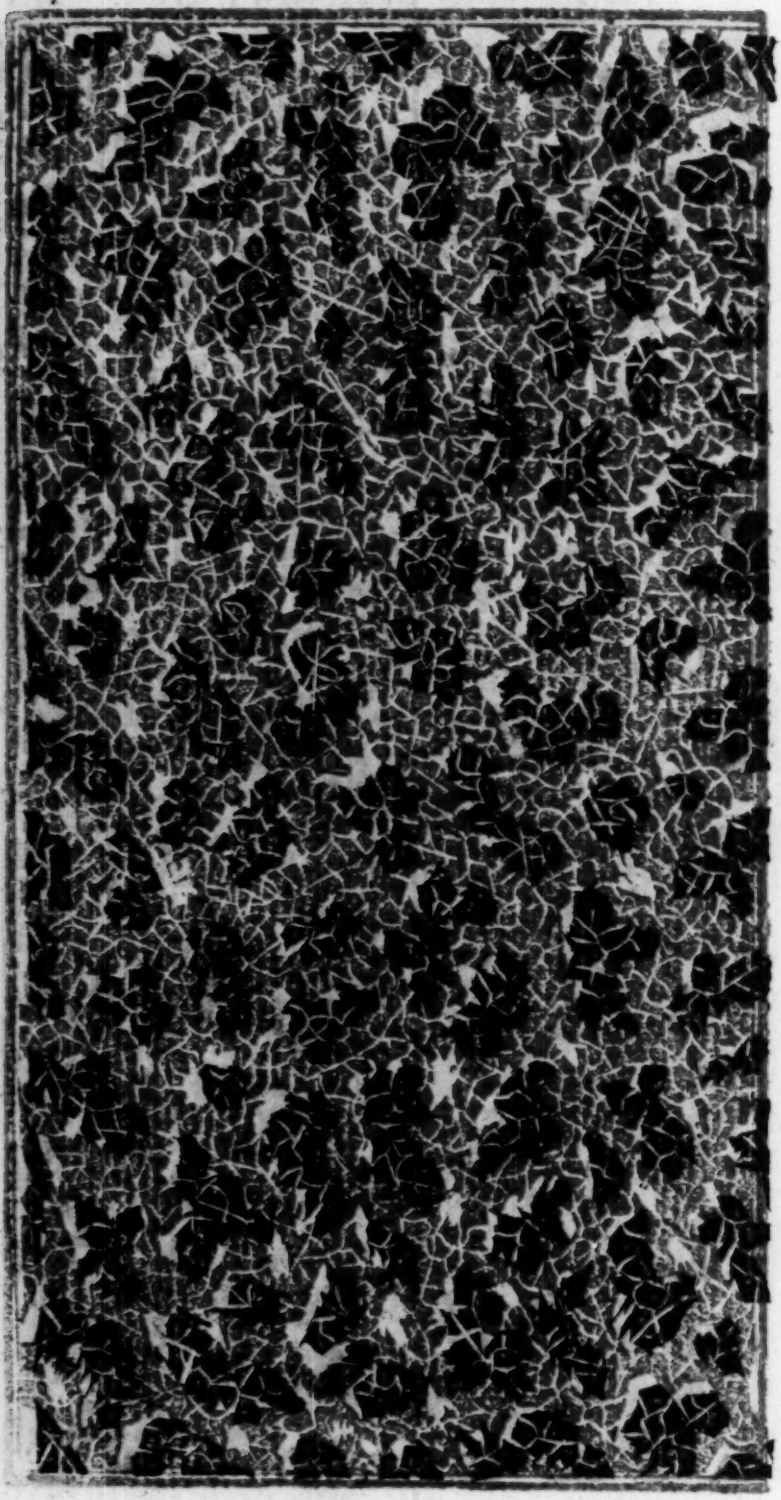
CHAP. XXXVI.

OF all the tracts my father was at the pains to procure and ſtudy in ſupport of his hypotheſis, there was not any one wherein he felt a more cruel diſappointment at firſt, than in the celebrated dialogue between *Pamphagus* and *Cocles*, written by the chaſte pen of the great and venerable *Eraſmus* upon the various uſes and ſeaſonable applications of long noſes.—— Now don't let Satan, my dear girl, in this chapter, take advantage of any one ſpot of riſing-ground to get aſtride of your imagination, if you can any ways help it; or if he is ſo nimble as to ſlip on, — let me beg of you, like an unback'd filly, *to friſk it, to ſquirt it, to jump it, to rear it, to bound it,—and to kick it, with long kicks and ſhort kicks*, till like *Tickletoby*'s mare you break a ſtrap or a crupper, and throw his woriſhip into the dirt.—You need not kill him. ——

— And pray who was *Tickletoby*'s mare?—'tis juſt as diſcreditable and unſcholar-like a queſtion, Sir, as to have aſked what year *(ab urb. con.)* the ſecond Punic war broke out.—Who was *Tickletoby*'s mare!— Read, read, read, read, my unlearned reader! read, — or by the knowledge of the great ſaint *Paraleipomenon* — I tell you beforehand, you had better throw down the book at once; for without *much reading*, by which your reverence knows I mean *much knowledge*, you will no more be able to penetrate the moral of the next marbled page (motly emblem of my work!) than the world with all its ſagacity has been able to unravel the many opinions, tranſactions and truths which ſtill lie myſtically hid under the dark veil of the black one.

CHAP.





CHAP. XXXVII.

"*NIHIL me pœnitet hujus naſi,*" quoth *Pamphagus*;—that is,—"My noſe has "been the making of me."——"*Nec eſt cur* "*pœniteat,*" replies *Cocles*; that is, "How the "deuſe ſhould ſuch a noſe fail?"

The doctrine you ſee was laid down by *Eraſmus*, as my father wiſhed it, with the utmoſt plainneſs; but my father's diſappointment was, in finding nothing more from ſo able a pen, but the bare fact itſelf; without any of that ſpeculative ſubtilty or ambidexterity of argumentation upon it, which heaven had beſtow'd upon man on purpoſe to inveſtigate truth and fight for her, on all ſides—My father piſh'd and pugh'd at firſt moſt terribly,—'tis worth ſomething to have a good name. As the dialogue was of *Eraſmus*, my father ſoon came to himſelf, and read it over and over again with great application, ſtudying every word and every ſyllable of it thro' and thro' in its moſt ſtrict and literal interpretation,—he could ſtill make nothing of it, that way. Mayhaps there is more meant, than is ſaid in it, quoth my father.—— Learned men, brother *Toby*, don't write dialogues upon long noſes for nothing—I'll ſtudy the myſtic and the allegoric ſenſe,—here is ſome room to turn a man's ſelf in, brother.

My father read on.—

Now, I find it needful to inform your reverences and worſhips, that beſides the many nautical uſes of long noſes enumerated by *Eraſmus*, the dialogiſt affirmeth that a long noſe is not

without its domeſtic conveniences alſo, for that in a caſe of diſtreſs, — and for want of a pair of bellows, it will do excellently well, *ad excitandum focum*, (to ſtir up the fire.)

Nature had been prodigal in her gifts to my father beyond meaſure, and had ſown the ſeeds of verbal criticiſm as deep within him, as ſhe had done the ſeeds of all other knowledge, —— ſo that he had got out his penknife, and was trying experiments upon the ſentence, to ſee if he could not ſcratch ſome better ſenſe into it.— I've got within a ſingle letter, brother *Toby*, cried my father, of *Eraſmus* his myſtick meaning. — You are near enough, brother, replied my uncle in all conſcience, — pſhaw! cried my father, ſcratching on—I might as well be ſeven miles off. —— I've done it,——ſaid my father, ſnapping his fingers. —— See, my dear brother *Toby*, how I have mended the ſenſe.——But you have marr'd a word, replied my uncle *Toby*, —— My father put on his ſpectacles, bit his lip, — and tore out the leaf in a paſſion.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

O *Slawkenbergius!* thou faithful analyzer of my *Diſgrázias*, — thou ſad foreteller of ſo many of the whips and ſhort turns, which in one ſtage or other of my life have come ſlap upon me from the ſhortneſs of my noſe, and no other cauſe, that I am conſcious of. —— Tell me, *Slawkenbergius!* what ſecret impulſe was it? what intonation of voice? whence came it? how did it ſound in thy ears? — art thou ſure thou heard'ſt it?—which firſt cried out to thee,

— Go

—Go,—go, *Slawkenbergius!* dedicate the labours of thy life,—neglect thy paſtimes,—call forth all the powers and faculties of thy nature—macerate thyſelf in the ſervice of mankind, and write a grand FOLIO for them, upon the ſubject of their noſes.

How the communication was conveyed into *Slawkenbergius*'s ſenſorium,—ſo that *Slawkenbergius* ſhould know whoſe finger touch'd the key,—and whoſe hand it was that blew the bellows—as *Hafen Slawkenbergius* has been dead and laid in his grave above foreſcore and ten years,—we can only raiſe conjectures.

Slawkenbergius was play'd upon, for aught I know, like one of *Whitfield*'s diſciples,—that is with ſuch a diſtinct intelligence, Sir, of which of the two maſters it was, that had been practiſing upon his *Inſtrument*,—as to make all reaſoning upon it needleſs.

——— For in the account which *Hafen Slawkenbergius* gives the world of his motives and occaſions for writing, and ſpending ſo many years of his life upon this one work.—Towards the end of his Prolegomena, which by the bye ſhould have come firſt,—but the book-binder has moſt injudiciouſly placed it betwixt the analitical contents of the book, and the book itſelf,——he informs his reader, that ever ſince he had arrived at the age of diſcernment, and was able to ſit down coolly, and conſider within himſelf the true ſtate and condition of man, and diſtinguiſh the main end and deſign of his being——or,——to ſhorten my tranſlation, for *Slawkenbergius*'s book is in *Latin*, and not a little prolix in this paſſage,——ever ſince I underſtood, quoth *Slawkenbergius*, any thing,——or rather

rather *what was what*,——and could perceive that the point of long noſes had been too looſely handled by all who had gone before;—have I, *Slawkenbergius*, felt a ſtrong impulſe, with a mighty and an unreſiſtible call within me, to gird up myſelf to this undertaking.

And to do juſtice to *Slawkenbergius*, he has entered the liſt with a ſtronger lance, and taken a much larger career in it, than any one man who had ever entered it before him,——and indeed, in many reſpects, deſerves to be *en-nich'd* as a prototype for all writers, of voluminous works at leaſt, to model their books by;——for he has taken in, Sir, the whole ſubject,—examined every part of it, *dialectically*,—— then brought it into full day; dilucidating it with all the light which either the colliſion of his own natural parts could ſtrike,——or the profoundeſt knowledge of the ſciences had impowered him to caſt upon it,——collating, collecting and compiling,——begging, borrowing, and ſtealing, as he went along, all that had been wrote or wrangled thereupon in the ſchools and porticos of the learned: ſo that *Slawkenbergius* his book may properly be conſidered, not only as a model,—but as a thorough-ſtitch'd DIGEST and regular inſtitute of *noſes*; comprehending in it, all that is, or can be needful to be known about them.

For this cauſe it is, that I forbear to ſpeak of ſo many (otherwiſe) valuable books and treatiſes of my father's collecting, wrote either plump upon noſes,—or collaterally touching them;—ſuch for inſtance as *Prignitz*, now lying upon the table before me, who with infinite learning, and from the moſt candid and ſcholar-like examination

mination of above four thouſand different ſkulls, in upwards of twenty charnel houſes in *Sileſia*, which he had rummaged, —— has informed us, that the menſuration and configuration of the oſſeous or boney parts of human noſes, in any *given* tract of country, except *Crim Tartary*, where they are all cruſh'd down by the thumb, ſo that no judgment can be formed upon them, ——— are much nearer alike, than the world imagines; ——— the difference amongſt them, being, he ſays, a mere trifle, not worth taking notice of,—but that the ſize and jollity of every individual noſe, and by which one noſe ranks above another, and bears a higher price, is owing to the cartilaginous and muſcular parts of it, into whoſe ducts and ſinuſes the blood and animal ſpirits being impell'd, and driven by the warmth and force of the imagination, which is but a ſtep from it, (bating the caſe of ideots, whom *Prignitz*, who had lived many years in *Turky*, ſuppoſes under the more immediate tutelage of heaven) —— it ſo happens, and ever muſt, ſays *Prignitz*, that the excellency of the noſe is in a direct arithmetical proportion to the excellency of the wearer's fancy.

It is for the ſame reaſon, that is, becauſe 'tis all comprehended in *Slawkenbergius*, that I ſay nothing likewiſe of *Scroderus (Andrea)* who, all the world knows, ſet himſelf to oppugn *Prignitz* with great violence, — proving it in his own way, firſt, *logically*, and then by a ſeries of ſtubborn facts, "That ſo far was *Prignitz* from the truth, in affirming that the fancy begat the noſe, that on the contrary, — the noſe begat the fancy."

— The

——— The learned ſuſpected *Scroderus*, of an indecent ſophiſm in this, — and *Prignitz* cried out aloud in the diſpute, that *Scroderus* had ſhifted the idea upon him, — but *Scroderus* went on, maintaining his theſis. —

My father was juſt balancing within himſelf, which of the two ſides he ſhould take in this affair; when *Ambroſe Paræus* decided it in a moment, and by overthrowing the ſyſtems, both of *Prignitz* and *Scroderus*, drove my father out of both ſides of the controverſy at once.

Be witneſs ——

I don't acquaint the learned reader, — in ſaying it, I mention it only to ſhew the learned, I know the fact myſelf. —

That this *Ambroſe Paræus* was chief ſurgeon and noſe-mender of *Francis* the ninth of *France*, and in high credit with him and the two preceding, or ſucceeding kings (I know not which) — and that except in the ſlip he made in his ſtory of *Taliacotius*'s noſes, and his manner of ſetting them on, — was eſteemed by the whole college of phyſicians at that time, as more knowing in matters of noſes, than any one who had ever taken them in hand.

Now *Ambroſe Paræus* convinced my father, that the true and efficient cauſe of what had engaged ſo much the attention of the world, and upon which *Prignitz* and *Scroderus* had waſted ſo much learning and fine parts, — was neither this nor that, —— but that the length and goodneſs of the noſe was owing ſimply to the ſoftneſs and flaccidity in the nurſe's breaſt, — as the flatneſs and ſhortneſs of *puiſne* noſes was, to the firmneſs and elaſtic repulſion of the ſame organ of nutrition in the hale and lively, —

which,

which, tho' happy for the woman, was the undoing of the child, inaſmuch as his noſe was ſo ſnubb'd, ſo rebuff'd, ſo rebated, and ſo refrigerated thereby, as never to arrive *ad menſuram ſuam legitimam*; — but that in caſe of the flaccidity and ſoftneſs of the nurſe or mother's breaſt, — by ſinking into it, quoth *Paræus*, as into ſo much butter, the noſe was comforted, nouriſh'd, plump'd up, refreſh'd, refocillated, and ſet a growing for ever.

I have but two things to obſerve of *Paræus*; firſt, that he proves and explains all this with the utmoſt chaſtity and decorum of expreſſion: —— for which may his ſoul for ever reſt in peace!

And, ſecondly, that beſides the ſyſtems of *Prignitz* and *Scroderus*, which *Ambroſe Paræus* his hypotheſis effectually overthrew, — it overthrew at the ſame time the ſyſtem of peace and harmony of our family; and for three days, together, not only embroiled matters between my father and my mother, but turn'd likewiſe the whole houſe and every thing in it, except my uncle *Toby*, quite upſide down.

Such a ridiculous tale of a diſpute between a man and his wife, never ſurely in any age or country got vent through the key-hole of a ſtreet-door:

My mother you muſt know, —— but I have fifty things more neceſſary to let you know firſt —— I have an hundred difficulties which I have promiſed to clear up, and a thouſand diſtreſſes and domeſtic miſadventures crowding in upon me thick and three-fold, one upon the neck of another, — a cow broke in (to-morrow morning) to my uncle *Toby*'s fortifications, and

and eat up two ratios and a half of dried graſs, tearing up the ſods with it, which faced his horn-work and covered way. ——— *Trim* inſiſts upon being tried by a court-martial, — the cow to be ſhot, — *Slop* to be *crucifix'd*, — myſelf to be *triſtram'd*, and at my very baptiſm made a martyr of; —— poor unhappy devils that we all are! ——— I want ſwaddling, — but there is no time to be loſt in exclamations. — I have left my father lying acroſs his bed, and my uncle *Toby* in his old fringed chair, ſitting beſide him, and promiſed I would go back to them in half an hour, and five and thirty minutes are laps'd already. —— Of all the perplexities a mortal author was ever ſeen in, — this certainly is the greateſt, — for I have *Hafen Slawkenbergius*'s folio, Sir, to finiſh — a dialogue between my father and my uncle *Toby*, upon the ſolution of *Prignitz*, *Scroderus*, *Ambroſe Paræus*, *Ponocrates* and *Grangouſier* to relate, — a tale out of *Slawkenbergius* to tranſlate, and all this in five minutes leſs than no time at all; ſuch a head! — would to heaven! my enemies only ſaw the inſide of it!

CHAP. XXXIX.

THERE was not any one ſcene more entertaining in our family, — and to do it juſtice in this point; — and I here put off my cap and lay it upon the table cloſe beſide my ink-horn, on purpoſe to make my declaration to the world concerning this one article, the more ſolemn, — that I believe in my ſoul, (unleſs my love and partiality to my underſtanding blinds

blinds me) the hand of the ſupreme Maker and firſt deſigner of all things, never made or put a family together, (in that period at leaſt of it, which I have ſat down to write the ſtory of) — where the characters of it were caſt or contraſted with ſo dramatic a felicity as ours was, for this end; or in which the capacities of affording ſuch exquiſite ſcenes, and the powers of ſhifting them perpetually from morning to night, were lodged and intruſted with ſo unlimited a confidence, as in the *Shandy* family.

Not any one of theſe was more diverting, *I ſay*, in this whimſical theatre of ours, — than what frequently aroſe out of this ſelf-ſame chapter of long noſes, — eſpecially when my father's imagination was heated with the enquiry, and nothing would ſerve him but to heat my uncle *Toby*'s too.

My uncle *Toby* would give my father all poſſible fair play in this attempt; and with infinite patience would ſit ſmoaking his pipe for whole hours together, whilſt my father was practiſing upon his head, and trying every acceſſible avenue to drive *Prignitz* and *Scroderus*'s ſolutions into it.

Whether they were above my uncle *Toby*'s reaſon, — or contrary to it — or that his brain was like wet tinder, and no ſpark could poſſibly take hold, — or that it was ſo full of ſaps, mines, blinds, curtins, and ſuch military diſqualifications to his ſeeing clearly into *Prignitz* and *Scroderus*'s doctrines, — I ſay not, — let ſchool-men — ſcullions, anatomiſts, and engineers, fight for it amongſt themſelves. —

'Twas ſome misfortune, I make no doubt, in this affair, that my father had every word of it

it to tranſlate for the benefit of my uncle *Toby*, and render out of *Slawkenbergius*'s *Latin*, of which, as he was no great maſter, his tranſlation was not always of the pureſt, — and generally leaſt ſo where 'twas moſt wanted, — this naturally open'd a door to a ſecond misfortune; — that in the warmer paroxyſms of his zeal to open my uncle *Toby*'s eyes — my father's ideas run on, as much faſter than the tranſlation, as the tranſlation outmoved my uncle *Toby*'s —— neither the one or the other added much to the perſpicuity of my father's lecture.

CHAP. XL.

THE gift of ratiocination and making ſyllogiſms, — I mean in man, — for in ſuperior claſſes of beings, ſuch as angels and ſpirits, — 'tis all done, may it pleaſe your worſhips, as they tell me, by INTUITION; — and beings inferior, as your worſhips all know, — ſyllogize by their noſes; though there is an iſland ſwimming in the ſea, though not altogether at its eaſe, whoſe inhabitants, if my intelligence deceives me not, are ſo wonderfully gifted, as to ſyllogize after the ſame faſhion, and oft-times to make very well out too: — but that's neither here nor there —

The gift of doing it as it ſhould be, amongſt us, — or the great and principal act of ratiocination in man, as logicians tell us, is the finding out the agreement or diſagreement of two ideas one with another, by the intervention of a third; (called the *medius terminus*) juſt as a man, as *Locke* well obſerves, by a yard, finds two mens nine-

nine-pin-alleys to be of the ſame length, which could not be brought together, to meaſure their equality, by *juxta-poſition.*

Had the ſame great reaſoner looked on, as my father illuſtrated his ſyſtems of noſes, and obſerved my uncle *Toby*'s deportment, — what great attention he gave to every word, — and as oft as he took his pipe from his mouth, with what wonderful ſeriouſneſs he contemplated the length of it, — ſurveying it tranſverſely as he held it betwixt his finger and his thumb, — then foreright, — then this way, and then that, in all its poſſible directions and foreſhortenings, — he would have concluded my uncle *Toby* had got hold of the *medius terminus*; and was ſyllogizing and meaſuring with it the truth of each hypotheſis of long noſes, in order as my father laid them before him. This by the bye, was more than my father wanted, — his aim in all the pains he was at in theſe philoſophick lectures, was to enable my uncle *Toby* not to *diſcuſs* — but *comprehend* — to *hold* the grains and ſcruples of learning, — not to *weigh* them. — My uncle *Toby*, as you will read in the next chapter, did neither the one or the other.

CHAP. XLI.

'TIS a pity, cried my father one winter's night, after a three hours painful tranſlation of *Slawkenbergius*, — 'tis a pity, cried my father, putting my mother's thread-paper into the book for a mark, as he ſpoke — that truth, brother *Toby*, ſhould ſhut herſelf up in ſuch impregnable faſtneſſes, and be ſo obſtinate as not to ſurrender

ſurrender herſelf ſometimes up upon the cloſeſt ſiege.—

Now it happened then, as indeed it had often done before, that my uncle *Toby*'s fancy, during the time of my father's explanation of *Prignitz* to him,—having nothing to ſtay it there, had taken a ſhort flight to the bowling green: his body might as well have taken a turn there too;—ſo that with all the ſemblance of a deep ſchool-man intent upon the *medius terminus*,—my uncle *Toby* was in fact as ignorant of the whole lecture, and all its pro's and con's, as if my father had been tranſlating *Haſen Slawkenbergius* from the *Latin* tongue into the *Cherokeè*. But the word *ſiege*, like a taliſmanick power in my father's metaphor, wafting back my uncle *Toby*'s fancy, quick as a note could follow the touch,—he open'd his ears,—and my father obſerving that he took his pipe out of his mouth, and ſhuffled his chair nearer the table, as with a deſire to profit,—my father with great pleaſure began his ſentence again, changing only the plan, and dropping the metaphor of the ſiege of it to keep clear of ſome dangers my father apprehended from it.

'Tis a pity, ſaid my father, that truth can only be on one ſide, brother *Toby*,—conſidering what ingenuity theſe learned men have all ſhewn in their ſolutions of noſes.——Can noſes be diſſolved? replied my uncle *Toby*.—

———My father thruſt back his chair,—roſe up,—put on his hat,—took four long ſtrides to the door,—jerked it open,—thruſt his head half way out,—ſhut the door again,—took no notice of the bad hinge,—returned to the table,—pluck'd my mother's thread-paper

out

out of *Slawkenbergius*'s book — went haſtily to his bureau, — walked ſlowly back, twiſting my mother's thread-paper about his thumb, — unbutton'd his waiſtcoat, — threw my mother's thread-paper into the fire, — bit her ſattin pincuſhion in two, fill'd his mouth with bran, — confounded it; —— but mark! ——— the oath of confuſion was levell'd at my uncle *Toby*'s brain, — which was e'en confuſed enough already, — the curſe came charged only with the bran, — the bran, may it pleaſe your honours, — was no more than powder to the ball.

'Twas well my father's paſſions laſted not long; for ſo long as they did laſt, they led him a buſy life on't, and it is one of the moſt unaccountable problems that ever I met with in my obſervations of human nature, that nothing ſhould prove my father's mettle ſo much, or make his paſſions go off ſo like gun-powder, as the unexpected ſtrokes his ſcience met with from the quaint ſimplicity of my uncle *Toby*'s queſtions. ——— Had ten dozen of hornets ſtung him behind in ſo many different places all at one time, — he could not have exerted more mechanical functions in fewer ſeconds, — or ſtarted half ſo much, as with one ſingle *quære* of three words unſeaſonably popping in full upon him in his hobby-horſical career.

'Twas all one to my uncle *Toby*, — he ſmoaked his pipe on, with unvaried compoſure, — his heart never intended offence to his brother —— and as his head could ſeldom find out where the ſting of it lay, — he always gave my father the credit of cooling by himſelf. ——— He was five minutes and thirty-five ſeconds about it in the preſent caſe.

By

By all that's good! ſaid my father, ſwearing, as he came to himſelf, and taking the oath out of *Ernulphus*'s digeſt of curſes, — (though to do my father juſtice it was a fault (as he told Dr. *Slop* in the affair of *Ernulphus*) which he as ſeldom committed as any man upon earth,) ——— By all that's good and great! brother *Toby*, ſaid my father, if it was not for the aids of philoſophy, which befriend one ſo much as they do,—you would put a man beſide all temper. ——— Why by the *ſolutions* of noſes, of which I was telling you, I meant as you might have known, had you favoured me with one grain of attention, the various accounts which learned men of different kinds of knowledge have given the world, of the cauſes of ſhort and long noſes. ——— There is no cauſe but one, replied my uncle *Toby*, — why one man's noſe is longer than another's, but becauſe that God pleaſes to have it ſo. ——— That is *Grangouſier*'s ſolution, ſaid my father. —— 'Tis he, continued my uncle *Toby*, looking up, and not regarding my father's interruption, who makes us all, and frames and puts us together in ſuch forms and proportions, and for ſuch ends, as is agreeable to his infinite wiſdom. —— 'Tis a pious account, cried my father, but not philoſophical, — there is more religion in it than ſound ſcience. 'Twas no inconſiſtent part of my uncle *Toby*'s character, — that he feared God, and reverenced religion. — So the moment my father finiſhed his remark,—my uncle *Toby* fell a whiſtling *Lillabullero*, with more zeal (though more out of tune) than uſual.

What is become of my wife's thread-paper?

CHAP.

CHAP. XLII.

NO matter,—as an appendage to ſeamſtreſſy, the thread-paper might be of ſome conſequence to my mother — of none to my father, as a mark in *Slawkenbergius*. *Slawkenbergius* in every page of him was a rich treaſury of inexhauſtible knowledge to my father, — he could not open him amiſs: and he would often ſay in cloſing the book, that if all the arts and ſciences in the world, with the books which treated of them, were loſt, — ſhould the wiſdom and policies of governments, he would ſay, through diſuſe, ever happen to be forgot, and all that ſtateſmen had wrote, or cauſed to be written, upon the ſtrong or the weak ſides of courts and kingdoms, ſhould they be forgot alſo, — and *Slawkenbergius* only left, — there would be enough in him in all conſcience, he would ſay, to ſet the world a-going again. A treaſure therefore was he indeed! an inſtitute of all that was neceſſary to be known of noſes, and every thing elſe, — at *matin*, noon, and veſpers was *Hafen Slawkenbergius* his recreation and delight: 'twas for ever in his hands — you would have ſworn, Sir, it had been a canon's prayer-book, — ſo worn, ſo glazed, ſo contrited and attrited was it with fingers and with thumbs in all its parts, from one end even unto the other.

I am not ſuch a bigot to *Slawkenbergius*, as my father; —— there is a fund in him, no doubt; but in my opinion, the beſt, I don't ſay the moſt profitable, but the moſt amuſing part of *Hafen Slawkenbergius*, is his tales, ——

and,

and, conſidering he was a *German*, many of them told not without fancy: — theſe take up his ſecond book, containing nearly one half of his folio, and are comprehended in ten decads, each decad containing ten tales. —— Philoſophy is not built upon tales; and therefore 'twas certainly wrong in *Slawkenbergius* to ſend them into the world by that name? ——— there are a few of them in his eighth, ninth, and tenth decads, which I own ſeem rather playful and ſportive, than ſpeculative, — but in general they are to be looked upon by the learned as a detail of ſo many independent facts, all of them turning round ſome how or other upon the main hinges of his ſubject, and collected by him with great fidelity, and added to his work as ſo many illuſtrations upon the doctrines of noſes.

As we have leiſure enough upon our hands, — if you give me leave, madam, I'll tell you the ninth tale of his tenth decad.

21 AU 69

END of the THIRD VOLUME.